This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

James Sharpe

Fry 2 f. 15

FRY COLLECTION

TAYLOR INSTITUTION

DOMINUS ILLUMINATIO MEA

PRESENTED BY
THE MISSES ESTHER CATHARINE,
SUSAN MARY AND JOSEPHINE FRY
FROM THE LIBRARY OF
THE LATE JOSEPH FORREST FRY
AND SUSANNA FRY

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES:

WITH

CURIOUS and INTERESTING ANECDOTES of the most Noted Persons in every Rank of Life, whose Hands it passed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY AND PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To show Vice its own image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His form and Pressure. SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. III.

LONDON:
Printed for J. WATSON, M. PEARCE, S. LEWIS, G. LONGMAN, and W. CROWDER.
M,DCC,LXXXV.

TAYLOR INSTITUTION
UNIVERSITY
18 APR 1955
OF OXFORD
LIBRARY

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE circumſtances in which the ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA fell into the hands of the Editor, as explained in the General Preface, accounts for this and the former additions to that work.

The uncommon favour with which the firſt Edition, imperfect as it was, was received, encouraged him to ſpare no pains for the recovery of the reſt of the Manuſcript. Though his ſucceſs, however, in this attempt, exceeded his expectations, fear of the prejudice, in general too juſtly, entertained againſt *Continuations*, prevented his publiſhing, in the ſecond edition, any more of what he had recovered, than could be added without enhancing the price. But as the ſale of ſo many numerous impreſſions, ſince that Addition, has entirely removed every ſhadow of ſuch fear, he thinks it would be injuſtice to the Public to withhold the reſt from them any longer.

As to the objection made to *Continuations*, that they are written after the firſt deſign is completed, and when the imagination is exhauſted, it can by no means affect the following ſheets, which are really *a Reſtitution of the Original*, not an Addition of any thing new, as will plainly appear to the judicious reader, who will find the ſame ſcope of imagination, the ſame ſpirited freedom, and depth of remark in every period of theſe volumes, which ſo eminently diſtinguiſhed the former, and trace the genuine connection through the whole.

For one great diſadvantage which theſe volumes ly under, Candour will make the juſt allowance, when the occaſion of it is conſidered.

This is the printing of theſe parts, thus detached and by themſelves, with only references to the places where they follow, in the context of the former volumes; by which means, they loſe the advantage of the general Fable, or, as I may ſay, *Machine*, which ſo happily introduces and ſupports the whole, and of which no more could be recovered; all, but what was at firſt publiſhed, being cancelled by the orthodoxy of the pretended clergyman into whoſe hands the manuſcript unfortunately fell, who ſpared no more than was indiſpenſibly neceſſary to open the deſign.*

 Had

* *See the general Preface.*

Had the Editor attended solely to his own interest, it would have suggested to him to have published this, as he did the former edition, inserted regularly according to the connection, as the established reputation of the work would insure the sale of the whole, even to those who had before purchased the former volumes. But this was an artifice he was incapable of using; and he chose to publish these volumes in this manner, rather than incur the least suspicion of so mercenary a design. He hopes, therefore, that a disadvantage occasioned by such a delicate disinterestedness, will not be looked upon as a defect; and that the whole will be viewed together, before any part is accused of abruptness, or want of uniformity to the general design.

The absurdity and injustice of levelling the general reproof of vice against particular persons, and tracing to real characters a work of mere imagination, are too glaring to require proof. Mr. *Addison*, in the instance he has given in one of his *Spectators*, of *the whole Duty of Man*, has shewn that the best book that ever was written, (humanly speaking), is liable to be construed into a scandalous libel, by such a *perversion*.

The editor of this work has the satisfaction to see, that whatever injurious attempts of that kind were at first made against it, they have not been able to prejudice it in the opinion of the Public, as appears from the great and continued demand for it, for so many years. Defamation may please the malignancy of man for a day; but it must be merit that can stand the test of time. Such insinuations are long since forgot, because unsupported by truth, as will all of the same nature, which may be made against the volumes now offered to the Public, while the merit of them shall remain for the entertainment and instruction of ages.

CON-

CONTENTS OF VOL. III.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. Chryſal enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home, but is unexpectedly ſtopt ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs, Chryſal changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter - - - - - - Page 1

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which Chryſal's maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled - - - - - 6

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of Chryſal's maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize. Chryſal changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence - - 11

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtic conference between Chryſal's new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war, with the cauſes and conſequences of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer - - - - 15

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of the ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer, with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army - 18

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude, by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſuades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army - 22

CHAP. VII.

Chryſal's maſter draws ſome intereſting compariſons between the *land and ſea ſervices*, which account for the different ſucceſs in them.

them. The officer is admitted, and put under arreſt for preſuming to do more than his duty - - 26

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up by Chryſal's maſter, on the general's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an intereſting piece of inſtruction behind him. Some ſhort, but ſtriking ſketches of the progreſs of the enterprize - - 31

CHAP. IX.

Chryſal's attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young Spaniard, who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter, to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The hiſtory of Don Alphonſo Guzman, the young Spaniard - - 31

CHAP. X.

Continued. Olivia's father is taken up by the Inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent; on an Engliſh battery's firing upon which, Don Alphonſo comes in deſpair to Chryſal's maſter, to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs - 40

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of Chryſal's maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation. The only buſineſs of a general. Chryſal's maſter performs his promiſe to Alphonſo, into whoſe ſervice Chryſal enters. Alphonſo recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of FUN of ſome Engliſh ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of Alphonſo. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - - - - 46

CHAP. XII.

Chryſal makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural conſequences. Chryſal's maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is flammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice Chryſal enters - 54

CHAP. XIII.

Character of Chryſal's new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between Chryſal's maſter and two perſons of conſequence, lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt - - - - 57

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The mysteries of agency, and convenience of a military government, with some curious notions of the genteelest ways of rising in life - - - - 62

CHAP. XV.

Affecting consequences of carrying the foregoing schemes into execution, with the conclusion of the character and history of Chrysal's master. Chrysal changes his service - - 67

CHAP. XVI.

Chrysal's master swallows a pill, and pleads an important cause without success. A curious method of parrying one false oath by another, with the first oath taken by the master of a merchantman. He shews another instance of his skill in steering clear of perjury, but without his former success. His notion of conscience. Chrysal changes his service - - 72

CHAP. XVII.

Chrysal makes some reflections on the policy of imposing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preserving the validity of oaths, with the consequences of their being administered indiscriminately, to all persons, and on all occasions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, represents some polite amusements in an odd light - 78

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a person's prostituting his character to please his company, aggravated by the dangerous mistake of ridicule for applause. Chrysal's master changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an interesting sermon, in which, among remarks more just than polite, he gives an uncommon reason for the particular deformity of vice in women - 83

CHAP. XIX.

Chrysal describes true compassion, and shews the general consequences of a man's acknowledging distress, with the reasons of it. Chrysal's master is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cause of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generosity. Chrysal enters into a new service - - - - - 87

CHAP. XX.

History of a lieutenant of a man war. A comparison between the rewards of merit in the land and sea services; with a remarkable instance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The consequence of attempting to set up for a mender of manners.

manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himself remarkable - - - - 93

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war, with the danger of speaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. Chrysal's master meets his brother. Some account of him. He represents certain matters in an odd light. Chrysal enters into his service. Conclusion of his character. Chrysal quits his service on an uncommon occasion, for one, from which he passes in the usual course of business into that of the general - - - - - - 98

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

Chrysal's master makes some characteristic reflections. He is surprised at the officer's refusing to make up matters, and gives a particular reason for some people's rising in the world. An extraordinary personage enters to him. Description of him. He gives a character of the native Americans, and offers some interesting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the closet, plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reason why the Americans are desirous of gold. Chrysal changes his service - - - - - 105

CHAP. II.

The manner in which Chrysal's master was received by his subjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in some important matters, with the consequences - - 114

CHAP. III.

Chrysal describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his houshold engaged. Remarks on FINERY. Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which Chrysal's master kept peace in his family - - - 117

CHAP. IV.

Chrysal's master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his countrywomen, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives

an

an odd instance of conjugal love, and refuses the civil offer of Chrysal's master, for a natural reason. Chrysal changes his service - - - - - - 123

CHAP. V.

Chrysal's mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief, by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence. Chrysal's mistress marries, and he changes his service for that of an old master - - 129

CHAP. VI.

Chrysal arrives in England. His master is saluted by a sight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens some mysterious scenes. THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR - - - - - 132

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this, and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, who left their poor TOOL in the lurch; with the consequences of this affair to a certain corps - - 136

CHAP. VIII.

Chrysal changes his service. He gets a view of a court of CIVIL JUDICATURE, on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimsical application of an old story, produces the strange effect of putting a counsellor out of countenance. The necessity of absolute power in some government, with a common decision, by which nothing is decided - - - 143

CHAP. IX.

Chrysal's master joins a remarkable set of company. Their characters. Chrysal changes his service. Account of the enterprize on which his late master's companions were going, with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands - - - - - 148

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the scene of action supplies matter for mirth to those whose trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried against law and reason. Enquiry into the

cause

cause of this. The rise of the prejudice against the profession of an actor - - - - - 152

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common consequence of excess of zeal. The professed intent of theatrical representations defeated by this absurd prejudice against actors. The vices against which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this and other abuses - - 155

CHAP. XII.

The system of policy by which Chrysal's master governed his state. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from success. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other - - - 158

CHAP. XIII.

Chrysal's master sits in judgment on some pieces offered to him. A poet of fashion enters. The arguments by which he supports his work against the objections of Chrysal's master, who makes some curious dramatical strictures. The poet, driven from his last retreat, the interest of his great friends, by the common cant of the house's being FULL for the season, departs in a rage, denouncing their resentment; which Chrysal's master shews his reason not to fear the effects of - 162

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. Chrysal's master rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical strictures. The poet modestly insists, that his play is refused only because it wants the interest of the great, and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulsed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments against these laws. The poet refuses to conform to the present taste, and makes an appeal. One more poet refused only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on something that affects more than care to own it. Chrysal changes his service, on an occasion not common - 166

CHAP. XV.

Chrysal's master engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleasure. His mistress persuades him that she has poisoned him and herself. His situation on hearing this. *Striking proofs* of medical skill, with the advantage of a *regular course of practice*. An exemplary instance of charity

CONTENTS.

and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors attention to the murdereſs - - - - - - - 172

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news, and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. Chryſal changes his ſervice - 176

CHAP. XVII.

Chryſal's maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary ſociety. Some reflections not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules - 181

CHAP. XVIII.

Chryſal's maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice, in preferring Chryſal's maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of THE DEVIL, juſt as he was invoked by Chryſal's maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſitor upon the company. The DEVIL fixes upon Chryſal's maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak - - 185

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL is degraded to a BABOON, and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of Chryſal's maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the bedeviled BABOON is traced next day to his introducer, who, at the inſtance of Chryſal's maſter, is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rites. Farther conſequences of this affair make the ſuperior break up his monaſtery, and build a church - - - - - - - 191

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent, with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth 196

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperior. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life.

life. Succefs in a private inftance encourages him to try his talents in an higher fphere, from which he foon defcends with difgrace. A ftriking inconfiftency in his character - 200

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiftory of the fuperior. The inconfiftency in his character accounted for. The reafon of his being fent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceffary to be attended to in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inftruct him in religion. A frightful ftory gives rife to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ftill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a fwoon. Account of the apparition - - 203

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a fwoon. He recovers, and terrifies his tutor by miftaking him for a faint. Charity begins at home. The tutor fagacioufly gueffes at the meaning of the miftake, and pioufly refolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeft addition to it. His repentance and converfion. His tutor moderates his zeal, for weighty reafons. He relapfes; and his tutor, for private reafons, divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ftory - - - - - - 208

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiftory of one who turned libertine in fpeculation, after he had loft the power of being fo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reafon why it is ftronger than any other. Inftances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is fuccefsful where all others had failed, and by a mafter-ftroke makes vanity gain a fignal triumph over virtue - - - - - 213

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new service. His master finds an ingenious excuse for returning home, but is unexpectedly stopt short by the way. In the common course of business,* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Character of his new master.*

THERE being a war between SPAIN *and* ENGLAND, CHRYSAL, *in the shape of a* DOUBLOON, *is presented by a* SPANISH *governor to the captain of an* ENGLISH *man of war cruising off the coast of* MEXICO, *in return for his quitting his station to give him an opportunity of sending the treasure to* EUROPE.

" As this was a compliment of great conse-
" quence to the *Spaniards*, the captain had been
" so handsomely considered for it, that his desires

 " were

"were ſatisfied, and he only wiſhed to be ſafe at "home to enjoy the wealth he had ſo happily ac-"quired."——Vol. I. page 51.)

However impatient he might be to return, it was neceſſary for him to find ſome pretence to juſtify a conduct ſo contrary to his duty, the time appointed by his ſuperiors for continuing on that ſtation not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loſs for expedients. He immediately came to a right underſtanding with the maſter of the ſhip, who alarming him ſuddenly at midnight with an account that her *ſtern-poſt* was looſe, and the reſt of the officers between ſleeping and waking formally ſigning his report without examining, he *bore away* directly for home with an happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all thoſe pleaſures which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye from a diſtance.

When man, confiding in his own wiſdom, quits the ſtraight path, to ſtrike out one nearer to his wiſhes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to diſappointment. My maſter had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he *fell in* one morning, juſt at the dawn, with a mighty fleet, from which it was impoſſible for him to eſcape. His anxiety made him inſtantly conclude them enemies. He curſed his fate in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, and leaving the care of the ſhip to his officers, pretended to be ſick, and threw himſelf on his bed in agonies little ſhort of deſpair. "Was it for this? (exclaimed he, wring-"ing his hands and gnaſhing his teeth), was it "for this I betrayed my truſt, and favoured the "enemies whom I was ſent to diſtreſs?—For "*this did I* put my honour in the power of a

"venal

"venal wretch, and desert my station, in direct "disobedience to my orders? But I am justly re- "warded! I have stopped at nothing to gather "wealth, and now I lose that and my liberty to- "gether. May every villain meet the same fate."

But the severity of his distress lasted not long. As soon as it was clear day, the fleet which caused his fears was found to be English; the moment he was informed of which, he recovered from his sickness, and putting the best face he could upon the matter, went to wait upon the admiral.

Though the fleet which the admiral commanded was irresistibly superior to any that could possibly be opposed to it, he was so desirous of every addition of strength, that he received my master with evident pleasure; and never enquiring what had been the cause of his quitting his station, informed him whither they were going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he should have of making his fortune.

But this opportunity, promising as it might appear, had no temptations for my master, whose thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expressed his concern in the strongest terms at not being able to bear a part in so glorious an enterprize, and produced the *report* of the condition of his ship, by which she was represented to be incapable of service, the reason, as he alleged, for his having quitted his proper station. This instantly changed the whole scene. The admiral assuming all the consequence of his unbounded authority, answered with a supercilious look, that he would order the ship to be surveyed by the proper officers, and then turned away, without deigning to take any farther notice of him.

As this was no more than my maſter had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the ſcrape, ſoon ſuggeſted the proper means for preventing any diſagreeable conſequences from it. Accordingly, when the *ſurvey* was regularly made next morning, he was *honourably* acquitted; but the maſter of the ſhip was broke for his error, and the other officers ſeverely rebuked for not having examined his report before they ſigned it.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions, I changed my ſervice for that of the admiral's *agent for his own private affairs*, who directly gave me to the admiral in ſome dealings between them.

When I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was lolling in a liſtleſs manner on a ſofa in his *ſtate-room*, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fierceſt climates of the Torrid Zone. A gown of thinneſt ſilk hung looſely over his large limbs; the radiance of the ſun was ſoftened by ſhades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept conſtantly wet to cool the air as it entered through them; and every diſagreeable ſavour was drowned in the moſt delicate perfumes.

The contraſt between ſuch magnificent luxury, and the condition of thoſe whoſe numbers made his ſtrength, ſhewed in the moſt glaring light the infatuation of vanity in diſplaying ſuch temptations to its own deſtruction as the moſt implicit obedience to laws could hardly be ſuppoſed proof to.

The awkwardneſs with which my maſter bore his ſtate, ſhewing that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his paſt life to ſee by what *illuſtrious actions* he had riſen to ſuch an exalted ſta-

tion; but, to my ſurprize, diſcovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a *phlegmatic indolence* and *ſervility of ſoul*, which induced his ſuperiors to entruſt power into his hands, without apprehenſion of its raiſing him to a conſequence that might claſh with their deſigns on any future occaſion.

I ſee you are aſtoniſhed that a perſon of ſuch a turn ſhould ever engage in active ſcenes, or be entruſted with the conduct of an enterprize ſo oppoſite to his diſpoſition as to make ſucceſs improbable. To unexperienced reaſon ſuch things muſt ſeem unaccountable; but the leaſt acquaintance with the ways of man would ſoon reconcile you to greater abſurdities. The convenience of the parent, not the genius of the child, is in general the only thing conſidered in the choice of a profeſſion on which the ſucceſs of life depends; and this is the reaſon why ſo few are eminent in things ſo eaſy to be eminent in; and when at length a perſon may have it in his power to quit a profeſſion which he did not chooſe, it is too late for him to chooſe another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what elſe to do with himſelf.

This may remove your ſurprize as far as it concerns my maſter's firſt entering into, and continuing in ſuch a way of life. As to his fitneſs for ſo difficult and important a command, that was the thing leaſt thought of when it was entruſted to him. The inſignificancy of his character, and his ſervility to his ſuperiors, pointed him out as the perſon proper for their purpoſe, as they not only made them ſecure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would alſo put it in their power to arrogate to themſelves the merit of ſucceſs, or lay

the blame of miscarriage upon him; and for these great qualifications only did they choose him on this occasion to execute *the design of another*, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of shewing that he knew more than themselves, and whose penetration and activity of soul might too probably have made him see through their designs, and push matters farther than was consistent with them.

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL'*s master was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, some curious secrets, in a business not generally understood, are laid open, and a seeming contradiction naturally reconciled.*

WHENEVER *England* is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my master now commanded was sent against one of the most important and wealthiest settlements of the *Spaniards* in that part of the world, not indeed with an ambitious design of annexing it to the state, or reimbursing any part of the expences of the war, but merely to distress the enemy by its destruction, and enrich those immediately employed in the conquest; the prospect of which, and the consequent schemes to accomplish it, so entirely engrossed the attention of them all, except my master, that they disregarded the difficulties, and ran so eagerly into the dangers of the *attempt, though* such and so many as were suffi-

cient to have damped the ardour of any beings directed by reaſon, and not inſenſible to the firſt principle of human action, that his phlegmatic diſpoſition was no impediment to their ſucceſs, as it left them at liberty to purſue ſuch meaſures as the inſtant occaſion ſhould ſhew to be expedient, without the delay of conſulting him.——I ſay, "except my maſter;" for not all the cares of ſo extenſive a command, all the hurry and buſtle around him, could ever ruffle the characteriſtic ſtagnation of his mind.

He was juſt awoke from his noon-tide nap, when his agent laid the bag *in which I was* upon his table, along with ſome papers. The chink of the gold inſtantly attracted his attention. "Eh!" (ſaid he, rubbing his eyes and yawning) "what is it o'clock?"—And being told, "Ay!" (continued he, ſtretching and yawning again) "I thought I had overſlept myſelf, I am ſo heavy! This climate is fit for nothing but ſleeping."——Then riſing languidly, "What papers are theſe?" (ſaid he) "Did I not ſay I would not be troubled about buſineſs?" "They are your own accompts for the *out-ſets* of this expedition, (anſwered the agent) which, if you pleaſe, you had better look over now, as we ſhall have others to attend to ſoon. I am ſorry to ſay it does not anſwer your expectations, but the people alleged that they had been made to pay ſo extravagantly for their *contracts*, that it was impoſſible for them to ſink the qualities of the ſtores ſo low as to be able to give you any thing on that account, ſo that all your profit is reduced to the one article of *ſhort-tale;* and in this too every captain muſt *go ſnacks.*"

"Not

"Not able to give me any thing!" said the admiral, who had been roused from his lethargic indifference, by the first mention of his own affairs, "They lie, the scoundrels; and I'll make them "know it. The *sick-lists* shew that they have sunk "them with a vengeance, and beyond every degree of reason; and if they think that I'll connive at their murdering the men, without having any share in the profit, they shall find themselves damnably out in their reckoning: And "therefore, do you go to every purser in the fleet, "and bid them to have a *survey* privately made of "the worst stores, to produce when I call for it. "I'll make them *come down*, and handsomely too, "or they shall repent it."——

"But, Sir, (replied the clerk) is not there danger that they may discover the affair of the "*short-tale*, in revenge for such an attack; and "that they who made the contract with them, "may be so offended as to hinder your being ever "employed again?"

"I care not!" (returned the admiral, clapping his hands a-kimbo) "I care not for their being "offended!——Not I!—I don't desire to be employed. If I mind my *bits* this time, I shall be "as rich as the best of them, and will stay at "home, and take my ease, as well as they: and "as to what you say of their discovering the affair "of the *short-tale*, that only shews your ignorance. They would lose more by that, than I "should, as they have made every thing so damn'd "bad, and are paid for the whole complement. "Besides, don't you consider whom they are to "complain to? No, no, we shall hardly expose "*one* another! Things and things hang together

"too

"too close for that! One is as deep in the mud as "the other is in the mire."

"But may not they spread stories abroad, which "may injure your character with the public?"—

"My character, do you say? Not in the least. "Such stories affect only the *clerks*, and such low "people, whose *perquisites* those things are reputed "to be, and who only appear in them; but that "can't be said to injure them neither, for what "clerk ever had a character that could be injur-"ed! Hah! hah! hah! so that your care for cha-"racter forsooth is quite unnecessary! Do what "you will, you cannot suffer in that. All you "have to do is to mind your business, and when "you have got money, no one will enquire about "your character."—

"Then, Sir, I presume the account must stand "open as it is, till we go back, to settle those "affairs?"——

"Aye!—Or stay! you may leave it with me. "It will amuse me to look it over when I have "nothing else to do! And you may pay in what-"ever money you have got too. I can give you a "receipt on account."——

"That's right, Sir," (said the clerk turning back, as recollecting himself) "I should be glad to "know what *poundage* you will require of the sut-"lers for the provisions they shall take on shore. "Several of them have applied to me to know."

"Only twenty shillings in the pound! (answer-"ed the admiral) *cent. per cent.* on the first cost."

"Perhaps, Sir, (replied the clerk) you don't "consider that the general will expect *his composi-"tion* too?"——

"Well! and what is his composition to me? "Let them give him as much more if they will.

"They

"They can afford it well enough. They may "charge as high as they please; their customers "cannot help themselves. They must pay any "price, rather than starve, since they have no "where else to go.

"But you need not give yourself any concern "about this. The general and I have agreed to "act in concert, and divide equally between us "every profit that can be made, while we con- "tinue together, so that all you have to do is to "meet *his private agent*, and settle matters with "him."

"I am very glad you have come to a good un- "derstanding with each other!" (said the agent, applying equivocally to the admiral, what he really meant of himself) "It would otherwise "have been impossible to avoid disagreements, as "your interests would have clashed in so many "instances, than which nothing can be more dan- "gerous in such affairs as ours, for fear of impro- "per discoveries; but where all parties under- "stand each other rightly, business goes on with "pleasure and success."

These weighty matters being thus adjusted, the agent withdrew, when my master walked a turn or two about his great-cabin, and then opening the money-bag, and telling the contents, put a few pieces, *among which I was*, into his pocket, and locked up the rest in his strong box, after which he threw himself again on the sofa, to rest after the fatigue of so much business.

You seem at a loss how to reconcile the senti- ments which my master discovered in this con- ference, with the luxury and magnificence of e- very thing about him. But they contradict not *each other in the* least. In the transactions with

his

his agent, he ſhewed the geniune motions of his heart; but with the other he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expence of the public, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax eſtabliſhed by cuſtom on the *purſers* of men of war, under the appearance indeed of a *preſent* to their commanders, but in reality as a *bribe* for conniving at their impoſitions; and this tax it is that enables thoſe commanders to live up to their rank, which their juſt pay would never do: a ſtriking inſtance of that wiſe œconomy, which, to ſave a penny, lays a man under the neceſſity of ſtealing a pound.

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL'S *maſter, on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech, which produces the uſual effects of eloquence.*

MY maſter had not paſſed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the officer next to him in command entered haſtily, and told him in a tranſport of joy, that the man at his maſt-head, had *made* the land.

"What land?" (ſaid my maſter, unmoved at the news, or the manner in which it was delivered by the other, whoſe eyes flaſhed fire as he ſpoke) "What land does he *make?*"

"The place of our deſtination!" (replied the

officer) "I had juſt then taken an obſervation my-"ſelf, and am convinced I am right."———

"Well then," (returned my maſter) if you are "ſure it is the place, here are your inſtructions. "You are to lead the van, and cover the landing, "about which proper directions will be given by "the general: When that is done, you ſhall have "farther orders."——Then ſwelling with the thought of his own conſequence, and reſolving to ſupport his dignity by an uncommon effort of generoſity, "Has the fellow who *made* the "land (ſaid he) been rewarded for his news?"

"Not yet; (anſwered the officer) the moment "I heard it, I ran up myſelf to the maſt-head, "and as ſoon as I was convinced it was true, flew "to acquaint you. But I ſhall remember him, "when I go back."

"And pray when you do, give him this in my "my name," (replied my maſter, putting his hand into his pocket, and reaching *me* to him;) "the "men's ſpirits muſt be kept up. We ſhall have "warm work of it; warm work!"——

"Glorious work" (added the officer) the trophies "of your fame will now be eſtabliſhed in the op-"poſite extremities of the globe. Few attain ſuch "happineſs."

"Aye!" (ſaid the Admiral, puffing and ſweating with the ſenſe of his great achievements), "I have done ſomething to be talked of in more "places than one. I have endured the ſeverities "of various climates. But we muſt bear every "thing in the ſervice of our country; we muſt "bear every thing without complaining."

"Have you any farther commands, ſir? (ſaid "*the officer*), it is proper I ſhould be on board.

"I ſee

"I see several of the ships have now made the "signal of seeing land."—

"Nothing more at this time, (answered the "Admiral). You have your orders, and will "take the best method to execute them. If you "should be at a loss at any time, you may apply "to me. I shall be in my proper station *in the* "*rear*, attentive to every thing that is doing."

My new master, on this, withdrew, leaving the Admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own consequence, and keep himself cool till dinner.

If the indolence of my late master was inconsistent with his station, the activity of my present seemed to exceed the abilities of a human being. The moment he got to his own ship, he made a signal for all the captains in his division, and the General, to come on board him; and then ordering his ship's crew to be called *aft*, he went to the *barricadoes*, and waving his hat over his head, "Courage, my lads! (said he), the day is ours. "The Admiral has given us leave to take yon"der town, with all the treasure in it; so that "we have nothing to do now, but make our for"tunes as fast as we can, for the place can ne"ver hold out against us. The purser will give "every brave fellow a can of punch to drink "prosperity to Old *England*, and then we'll go "about our business with spirit. We shall all be "as rich as Jews. The place is paved with gold, "which the lubberly Dons have gathered for us. "Old *England* for ever is the word, and the day "is ours."

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence always has, it transported the hearers out of their senses. They answered with three cheers,

which made the welkin ring, and then went ſkipping and dancing with joy to get their punch, a foretaſte of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations.

As they were going off, my maſter happened to ſee among the crowd the man who had firſt diſcovered the land, and calling to him, "Here, "ſhip-mate," ſaid he, giving him a Doubloon, "here is ſomething the Admiral has ſent you for "your good *look-out*; and take this alſo from me, "(giving him another); and I hope to give you "an hundred more for hoiſting your colours on "the top of yonder walls."——

"Aye! noble Captain," ſaid the ſailor, ſhrugging his ſhoulders, and making his beſt bow, "and ſo I will, or it ſhall coſt me a worſe fall "than from the main-top-gallan-maſt-head, that "is, when the ſhip *takes a heel!* I'll pull down "proud *Spain*, and clap Old *England* in its "place."

The ſpirit which my maſter ſhewed in every word and action, intereſted me ſo far in his favour, that I was pleaſed at his not having parted with me on this occaſion.

By this time the General and the Captains were come on board; and being ſhewn into the great cabin, "Good news, gentlemen," ſaid my maſter in an ecſtaſy, ſhaking every one of them by the hand as they entered, "I bring you good "news! Yonder is the object of our hopes, the "place that is to make our fortunes, and crown "us with glory, if it is not our own faults; for "the Admiral has given us general orders to proceed in the beſt manner we can, and without "loſing time or opportunity in waiting to con-

"ſult

"sult him on every occasion; so that if we fail, "the fault will be entirely ours, as I said before, "as also will the glory of success."

This news filled them all with the highest spirits. They congratulated each other on a success of which they made no doubt; and having concerted the measures proper to be taken, returned to their ships, to carry them into instant execution.

CHAP. IV.

A characteristic conference between CHRYSAL'*s new master, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the causes and consequences of several celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to; for courage in soldiers and subaltern officers, accounts politically for some apparent wrongs which they suffer.*

AS soon as the captains were gone, my master turned to the General, for whom he had a particular regard, and embracing him eagerly, "Now, my dearest friend, (said he), you will "have an opportunity not only of gaining such "glory as will add lustre to the dignity of your "birth, but also of acquiring a fortune to support that dignity properly. But what is the "matter? You do not seem affected at the happy "prospect! are you not well?"

"Well!" answered the General, shrugging up his shoulders, "yes, I am well enough as yet; "but know not how long I shall continue so, in

"this damn'd place, the heat of which seems to "have set you on fire."

"Damn'd place, do you call it?" replied my master, vexed to the soul at the manner in which the other spoke, "it will be an happy place for "you, if it is not your own fault, a much hap- "pier place than where I suppose you wish to be, "*gaming at the coffee-house*, or *cracking jests for* "*your patron over a bottle*. But take care! the "eyes of all your officers are upon you, and if "they should observe this indifference, it would "ruin you for ever. They would directly attri- "bute it to want of spirit, on the least suspicion "of which, your patron would cast you off with "contempt and abhorrence, and never interest "himself more in your behalf; and you know "with what difficulties he obtained this com- "mand for you; so much indeed, that gratitude "to him should make you exert yourself, if you "had no other motive, as he in a manner staked "his character for you. Come! stir! you will "be in no danger. Your post exempts you from "that. All you have to do is to appear animat- "ed and alert; and give your orders with fire. "Your officers are to encounter all the dangers."

"As for the dangers of war," returned the General, stung by the implication in the latter part of what my master had said, "I disregard "them as much as any man; but this damn'd "climate is the thing. I hate the thought of "fighting with an invisible enemy, of sucking "in diseases and death with my breath; and then, "besides, I hate all trouble so much too, that I "would this moment give up the prospect of "*glory*, which you seem so struck with, to be at "*home safe*, and at my ease."—"But the prof-

"pect

" pect of gain! would you give up that too? I " have often heard you paffionately lament your " want of a fortune fuitable to your rank, and " now you have it in your power to acquire it. " But if you mifs this opportunity"——

" May I never get another!——No! no! I " fhall hardly give up that! I will not neglect " any thing in my power to acquire a fortune! " But what did you mean juft now, by faying " you'd go yourfelf in your long-boat to head the " men? Sure that is not neceffary."——

" Aye! and you muft go too for this time! " There is no poffibility of difpenfing with it. " But this will be the only night you need ftay " on fhore, or expofe yourfelf to any danger. " You may go on board every night after this, " and fleep in quiet and fafety; for there will be " little or no danger by day. All the work muft " be done by night."——

" My deareft friend, and if I may, I will. It " is but faying that the night air does not agree " with me, and no one will dare to mutter a " word to the contrary."

" Come then, let us move! The men will do " their duty with double fpirits, when they fee " us in earneft. I am as defirous of making and " enjoying a fortune as you can be, but would " make it with as much credit as poffible, though; " and to convince you that I confult your credit " alfo, your coufin fhall go with me, and give " out whatever orders I fee proper, as if they " came immediately from you. Only do not " you betray the contrary by your inattention. " Confider what immenfe treafure there is in the " place, and what a noble fhare of it will fall " *to you.*"——

"Aye! aye! let us but once come to ſharing "the plunder, and I'll engage to be as alert and "attentive as the beſt of you all. Never fear me "at that work. No one ſhall get the ſtart of me "there. As you ſay I muſt ſtay on ſhore to-"night, though, I'll juſt ſee my *night-dreſs* put "up ready, to take with me, with a *febrifuge*, "two or three *juleps*, and ſome *ptiſane*, to guard "againſt the worſt, and then I'll be with you; "though I wiſh it were poſſible to avoid going "on ſhore this night. There will be ſuch hurry "and confuſion in landing the men, that I ſhall "unavoidably put myſelf in an heat, and that is "very dangerous in the night air; but I'll take "a purge in the morning to carry it off."——

"Prithee don't think of ſuch things now. "Your officers all expect you, and it is time you "were with them; ſo remember the conſequence, "and exert yourſelf with ſpirit. The ſucceſs of "this affair will enable you to ſpend the reſt of "your life as you pleaſe."——

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army.

MY maſter then embraced his friend, and each was juſt going to attend the buſineſs of his *ſeparate department*, when a ſubaltern officer in one of the regiments under the general's command,

mand, desired to speak with him directly on matters of the most earnest importance.

At the mention of the officer's name, the general shewed the strongest disgust. "Damn that "meddling fellow, (said he peevishly) what would "he be at now? I suppose this is one of his ro- "mantic schemes to *distinguish himself!* I am not "at leisure: Let him wait."

"Pray who is this?" (said my master, not a little surprized at the manner in which the general spoke) "And what scheme can he propose, "that should give you such offence?"

"He is an hot-headed, ignorant fellow, (an- "swered the general) who knows so little of the "world as to think of rising in the army by his "merit, as he calls it; and for that purpose, not "content with doing his duty, is always seeking "unnecessary dangers, in order, forsooth, *to dis- "tinguish* himself; though his own experience, as "well as general observation, might long since "have convinced him of the folly of such a "scheme, as he never has been in any action "in which he has not found means to make "himself remarkable; and still so far from rising, "he has had the mortification to see himself evi- "dently slighted, and younger officers daily put "over his head, for no other reason but because "they behaved in a less offensive manner."

—"I don't understand you. What offence "can possibly be taken at a man's striving to dis- "tinguish himself in a profession, where emula- "tion is in a manner essential to success?"

—"Perhaps it may in the navy. But shew "me, if you can, one instance in the army of a "man's rising by that kind of merit! No! no! "*our rule is directly* the contrary. A subaltern's

"attempting

" attempting to distinguish himself, is an affront
" to his superiors not to be forgiven, as it im-
" plies a saucy design of putting himself into com-
" petition with them for the good opinion of the
" public; and therefore such attempts are always
" discountenanced. If it were otherwise, no man
" of fortune or interest would ever enter into the
" army, as he could not think of enjoying his
" ease, or shewing a prudent regard to his safety,
" on any occasion, without being liable to be ex-
" posed to disgraceful comparisons by the imper-
" tinent assiduity or rashness of every hot-head-
" ed or beggarly fellow, who has no way of being
" able to live but by shewing his disregard for life
" and all its pleasures. Indeed poverty may pos-
" sibly seem to be some excuse for such beha-
" viour, but this man has not that to plead. He
" is above want, and acts in this manner merely
" from an ambitious, turbulent spirit, that must
" be kept under. You seem surprised at what I
" say; but I'll give you an instance or two of the
" effects of this very man's passion for *dinstin-
" guishing himself* in more ways than one, which
" will convince you of the necessity of a general's
" suppressing every tendency to emulation of that
" kind in the army.

" In our last attempt upon the coast of *Spain*,
" a young gentleman of family and fortune took
" a whim to go as a volunteer with the general,
" merely to indulge curiosity, and have some-
" thing to talk of among the ladies on his return.
" As they were on their voyage, the gentleman
" unluckily happened to fall into company with
" this officer, who, on hearing him talk away
" *carelessly* in the confidence of his great fortune,
" *had the* assurance to tell him that courage did

"not confift in words; but that when they fhould
" meet the enemy, he himfelf would give him
" an opportunity of proving his, by keeping him
" company.

" The gentleman, never confidering that his
" fituation in life raifed him above emulation
" with one fo much below him, thought fuch a
" challenge could not be refufed; and according-
" ly the day that our troops were beat off, in his
" way to the fea-fide unluckily meeting this man,
" who with his ufual defign of *diftinguifhing him-*
" *felf* had officioufly drawn the company to which
" he belonged, and which he had fo endeared him-
" felf to by a mean attention to relieving their
" wants, when not occafioned by their own faults,
" that they would follow him any where, and
" made a ftand in a place of fuch danger, that
" no one but himfelf would have thought of tak-
" ing poft there, in order to cover the embarka-
" tion of fuch as could efcape, and remember-
" ing what had paffed between them on board,
" would needs ftop with him; here he was killed
" by the very firft fire of the enemy, as it was
" the greateft odds but every one of them muft
" have been, unfupported as they were; though
" it appeared afterwards, that had the general
" pofted a proper force in that very place at firft,
" or even reinforced him, the retreat might have
" been regular, and the greateft part of the hea-
" vy lofs which he fuffered, faved. But that was
" no bufinefs of this man's; and it was the high-
" eft impudence in one of his ftation to take fuch
" a ftep without orders, as muft neceffarily ex-
" pofe the neglect of his general, and draw dif-
" grace upon him; for which reafon any general
" would rather even lofe a battle, than owe it to

" fuch

" ſuch means as muſt take away the credit of it
" from him in that manner."

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſuades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army.

" NOR was this the only inſtance in which " this man's paſſion for *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, " was attended with diſagreeable conſequences " on that occaſion.

" As he was ſwimming to the boats, (for he " had ſtaid ſo long to cover the eſcape of others, " that when the remains of his little party was " at length broke by the whole body of the ene- " my's army, and driven to the ſea-ſide, there " was not a boat near to take them off; ſo that " he had no other way of eſcaping himſelf but by " plunging into the ſea and ſwimming after them) " he was ſo incumbered with his clothes that he " was in the greateſt danger of being drowned, " which one of his men, who ſwam better, hap- " pening to perceive, and knowing by his dreſs " that he was an officer, he ſaved him, without " diſtinguiſhing in the confuſion of ſuch a ſitua- " tion who he was.

" As ſoon as the officer came to himſelf in the " boat, (for he was ſo near being drowned as to " have loſt his ſenſes) and underſtood what had

" happened,

" happened, he turned to the ſoldier, and telling " him ſlightly, that it was very well, proceeded to " exert himſelf in *his uſual officious* manner, in " ſaving as many others, who were in the ſame " circumſtances, from which he had juſt eſcaped " himſelf, as he could, (while all his ſuperior of- " ficers, who had taken care to get off in time, " were refreſhing themſelves after their fatigue " and fright), without taking any farther notice " of the ſoldier who had ſaved him; though every " one thought he ſhould have given the poor fel- " low a guinea or two at leaſt, in reward for his " good-nature, and failed not to rail at him loud- " ly for neglecting it.

" Beſides the pitifulneſs and ingratitude of ſuch " behaviour, there was another circumſtance that " made it look ſtill worſe, which was, that he had " had this very ſoldier ſeverely puniſhed for ſome " fault, juſt before they had embarked on this ex- " pedition, ſo that it appeared like perſiſting in " perſonal malice to him. For he is not ſatisfied " with diſtinguiſhing himſelf only in time of ac- " tion. Even before the war was thought of, his " attention to diſcipline gave equal offence, as " it put every officer in the regiment to the " trouble of minding matters, which otherwiſe " they ſhould never have thought about, in order " to avoid impertinent compariſons.

" But all the railing of the men, and reflections " of the officers, had no effect upon him. He " minded his buſineſs with his uſual aſſiduity and " ſtrictneſs, nor ever ſeemed to think of what had " happened during the whole voyage home.

" But this was only affectation, to make what " he intended to do the more remarkable. As " ſoon as the troops were landed in *England*, he

" ordered

"ordered the ſoldier to come one morning to his "quarters, and bring his wife with him.

"The common motive for ſuch orders was far "from raiſing him in the opinion of any who heard "of it. However, many ſimilar inſtances convin- "cing the ſoldier that he muſt obey, they went ac- "cordingly; where after after a few common "queſtions, "I have ſent for you, brother ſol- "dier, (ſaid the officer) to make you ſome return "for the ſervice you did me. Here is your diſ- "charge from the regiment. You were bred to a "good trade, and have had time to be cool'd from "the follies which firſt made you liſt in the "army; and your wife is an induſtrious honeſt "woman, ſo that there is no danger but you may "do very well in your buſineſs, to ſet you up in "which here is an hundred pounds; and ſo take "care of yourſelf, and God bleſs you."

"Sir! Sir! noble Sir!" (ſaid the ſoldier, over-come with ſuch unexpected generoſity) "I humbly "thank your honour; but why my diſcharge? I'll "never quit you. I'll live and die with you! I'll "follow your honour to the mouth of a cannon. "I don't deſire my diſcharge."—

"I don't believe you do!" (anſwered the officer) "nor do I in the leaſt doubt your bravery. But I "cannot have you under my command. Your "careleſſneſs has often led you into faults, which "have obliged me to puniſh you, as it too proba- "bly may again. Now after the ſervice you have "done me, I never could bear the thought of "having you puniſhed, and I never will have any "man under me, who ſhall eſcape puniſhment, "when he commits a fault that deſerves it; ſo "*that* we muſt part. My advice to you, as your "*friend*, *is* to return to your own country, and

"follow

"follow your businefs; and if I fee that you make "a good ufe of what I have now given you, I "fhall be ready to affift you farther. But if you "choofe to continue in the army, any regiment "will readily receive you."

"No! (replied the fellow fobbing and blubber-"ing); no! fince I muft not ftay with you, I will "ferve under no one elfe."——

"Now what do you think was the confequence "of this vanity? Why truly, he *diftinguifhed him-"felf* fo much by it, that no other officer met with "any refpect from the foldiers after, who were "continually crying him up for his generofity, to "excite others to follow his foolifh example, and "throw away their money in relieving the diftrefs "of a parcel of fellows, whom they have nothing "to do with, and the government is obliged to "take care of, if they are worth any care, after "they are paft doing farther fervice."

"But the general fhewed proper refentment of "fuch impertinence, and put an officer younger "by many years over his head, to reward the "pains he had taken to *diftinguifh himfelf*. No, "no! that is not the way to rife in the army "now-a-days. Where a man has neither money, "nor intereft to pufh him forward, *being able to "fing a good fong*, or *pimp well*, or *having a hand-"fome wife*, or *fifter*, with a proper degree of hu-"mility and complaifance, will avail him more "than all the courage and conduct in romance."

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's *master draws some interesting comparisons between the land and sea services, which account for the different success in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arrest for presuming to do more than his duty.*

IT is remarked that men seldom enquire into the causes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curiosity, which is one of the greatest incentives to knowledge. They have always seen such things; and therefore have never enquired how they came to be so. My master who had long observed the fact, but never thought of the cause, was at first a good deal surprised at what his friend said. After some pause, " I am afraid what you say is too true, (said " he), and I am sorry for it. The service would " go on much better if it were otherwise, as you " see *ours* does, many of the most eminent com- " manders in which have raised themselves from " the very lowest stations, merely by that kind " of merit, which you take such pains to discou- " rage."——

" That may be so," answered the general; " but the case of *your* service, and *ours* is quite " different. Every captain of a man of war, when " on a separate cruise, acts as a general in chief; " and even in a fleet, his force is so immediately " collected under his own command, and separat- " ed from every other, that it is in some measure " in the nature of a detachment; so that, in both " cases, he has a right to do whatever he thinks " proper,

" proper, without danger of giving offence to any " one elſe.

" But how ſhould you like to have one of your " midſhipmen, or lieutenants, running every mi- " nute to you with advice, or preſuming to ſtrike " out new methods for working the ſhip in a gale " of wind, or fighting her in time of action ?"

" Perhaps not very well, without he had be- " fore-hand ſhewed me the advantage of ſuch new " methods, and then I ſhould moſt readily adopt " them, without ever conſidering whom they " came from. But, indeed, there is a more eſſential " difference between your ſervice and ours, than " you have taken notice of, which is, that every " man muſt be a ſtated time a ſubaltern, (a mid- " ſhipman), before he can, by any intereſt, be pro- " moted to a higher rank; which time is ſuf- " ficient for him to acquire a competent degree " of knowledge in his buſineſs, and which time " he can ſcarcely apply to any thing elſe; as, from " the ſituation he muſt be in for the greateſt part " of it, (at ſea), he has nothing elſe to which he " can apply himſelf; and this, and the ſpirit of " emulation, for the exertion of which their act- " ing ſeparately affords them, as you obſerve, the " moſt advantageous opportunities, may poſſibly " be the reaſons, why ſo many diſtinguiſh them- " ſelves, (if I may uſe the word without offence), " among us ſo gloriouſly, and with ſuch advan- " tage to their country; while the officers of the " army, for want of due encouragement to per- " ſonal merit, become diſpirited, and indifferent to " the ſucceſs of a ſervice in which they have no " hopes of riſing, by any means in their own " power."

"A severe remarker might perhaps account for "this discouragement to emulation, and neglect "of personal merit in the army, from motives not "much to the credit of the commanders, and say, "that *as they had not risen by such themselves*, they "looked with an invidious eye upon them, as a "reproach to their own want of both. Indeed, it "cannot be just to expect, that a general, *who has* "*spent his life in paying court to a minister, or fa-* "*vourite*, or *who was preferred only for his interest* "*in Parliament*, should understand the *minutiæ* of "his duty, and see the necessity of encouraging a "merit, the want of which was no obstacle to his "own preferment.—But this is an evil beyond "our power to redress; though, till it is redressed, "matters can never go on with that success, which "a contrary conduct would make certain.

"However, I think you had better see this "gentleman. Perhaps he may have something to "inform you of, worth your attention. At any "rate, it is not proper to throw any damp on "courage, at such a time as this."

The general, who seldom disputed my master's opinion, accordingly ordered him to be admitted; and, enquiring what was his business, "Sir, (said "the officer,) I come to inform you, that I have "discovered a proper place for landing the troops, "which I will undertake to make good, with only "two hundred men of the regiment to which I "belong, against all the force of the enemy, if I "am permitted to go directly, before they have "time to throw up any works there."——

"You have discovered, Sir!" answered the general haughtily, "I do not understand you! Pray "when did you make this notable discovery?——

"Just

"Juſt now, Sir;" replied the officer, not in the leaſt diſconcerted at the manner in which the general ſpoke, "the *tranſport* in which I was, happening to *ſtretch away a-head*, I got out a boat, "and have reconnoitred a great part of the coaſt, "in the think of the enemy's fire."——

"And pray, who ordered you to reconnoitre in "this manner?"——

"No one, Sir, I never wait for orders to do any "thing that I think for the advantage of the ſervice."

"Then, Sir, I'll have you to know, that no "man under my command ſhall take upon him "to do any thing without orders. He is a good "man who does his duty, and I deſire no more."—

—"But though you may not expreſsly deſire "it, Sir, I hope it is no perſonal offence to you, "for an officer to ſtrive to diſtinguiſh himſelf!"

—"*Perſonal offence!* What do you mean, Sir? "I do not underſtand you!"——

—"I am ſurprized at that Sir! I think my "meaning is pretty plain."——

—"Sir, I care not what you think; but I'll "make you bridle your tongue."——

—"*Bridle my tongue!* That is not in your "power, Sir; nor perhaps my hands either, at "a proper time. I will ſay what I know to be "juſt, and do what I have a right to do, without being browbeaten by any man."——

—"And ſo will I, Sir, do what I have a right "to do; I will this moment put you in arreſt for "your inſolence, and keep you there, till you "have learned how to behave yourſelf more properly to your ſuperiors."—

The general inſtantly put his threats in execution, ſending him, burſting with indignation at ſuch

fuch treatment, under arreft to the fhip to which he belonged.

The converfation between the general and the officer had been carried on fo rapidly, that my mafter had not any opportunity of interfering. As foon as he was gone, "I heartily wifh (faid "he dryly) this affair had not been carried to "fuch extremity. It will have an ugly appear- "ance at this time, and may be made very bad "ufe of, in cafe of any unforefeen difappoint- "ment."

"Why! why!" (faid the general, fcarce recovered from his paffion); "How could I help it? "Would you have me bear to be infulted, and "threatened in that manner, without fhewing "the refentment proper for my ftation?"——

"By no means: When things had gone fo far, "I do not fee how you could avoid doing what "you have done. I only wifh you had treated "him at firft in another manner, and not pro- "voked him beyond his reafon. I own I have "conceived a favourable opinion of him. He "appeared to be actuated by true zeal, and fpoke "with the cool firmnefs of a foldier, till he was "put off his guard. To be fure there was a great "impropriety in his going to reconnoitre in that "manner, as it may draw the attention of the "enemy that way; but then he might have been "told of that, without treating him with fuch "haughtinefs."——

—"Very true; it was very improper: I wifh "I had thought of that. But the infolence of his "coming to advife one, and prefuming to act "without orders, put it out of my head."——

—"What is paft cannot be helped now; but "*do not* do any thing farther to-day, and I'll try

" to make it up some way to-morrow, before it " can be known, or have any bad consequences."

The friends then parted, though neither quite so well satisfied with the other as before this affair.

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up by CHRYSAL's *master, on the general's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an interesting piece of instruction behind him.—Some short but striking sketches of the progress of the enterprize.*

I SEE you are anxious for the fate of this officer. To satisfy your curiosity, and avoid being obliged to break the thread of my narrative with the sequel of this story at another time, I will give it to you now.

At the instance of my master, the general sent the next morning to discharge the officer from the arrest; but he, conscious of his innocence, and glowing with resentment for the indignity offered to his honour, refused to stir till his character should be cleared by a court-martial, which he therefore resolutely demanded as his right.

This embarrassed the general not a little. However, after some days, when the officer's patience was pretty well tried, and the severe losses sustained in the course of the siege, made the worth of such men more attended to, my master attacked him on his *foible*, his principles of honour, and zeal for the service of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the general's

making him an apology for what had passed; which, taking the hint from my master, he attributed entirely to his apprehension of the enemies being put on their guard by his reconnoitring, so as to prevent his landing the troops at that place, *as he had before designed;* and, to conceal the disgrace he had suffered, he not only expressed this publicly, and treated him with an appearance of uncommon respect during the siege, but also, on his return home, to avoid some consequences which might not have been so very agreeable to him, when the officer, no longer immediately under his command, made a resolute demand of *personal satisfaction*, repeated his former apology in the most public manner and obliging terms, and affected to use his interest to get him promoted; but too cooly to succeed, so universal was the offence taken at his presuming to think of *distinguishing himself*, by a conduct which gave trouble to his equals to imitate, and *reflected disgrace on his superiors, who had never practised the like themselves.*

The consequence at length was, that after repeated breaches of direct promises to do him justice, he thought it proper to quit a service in which he had spent the prime of his life with credit, but without advantage, in order to shew an honest resentment, and avoid the mortification of meeting farther neglect; leaving behind him this important instruction, purchased by his dear experience, *that personal merit is quite unnecessary in a subaltern officer, and an obstacle, not an assistance to his rising in the army.*—But to return to my story.

You must not expect a circumstantial detail of *the progress* of this enterprize. The operations

of war are too confufed to give pleafure to reafon in the reprefentation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I fee you think this remark too fevere; but that is the effect of prejudice. When the victories which have been blazoned higheft, and reflected the greateft glory on thofe who gained them, are ftripped of the falfe colourings laid on only to dazzle and deceive, and examined coolly, moft of them will be found to have been owing to fome unforefeen accident, fome lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or elfe an obftinate perfeverance in their own, after every boafted rule of art has been broken through, every refource of judgment exhaufted in vain, and to have been attended by circumftances of fuch mifery and lofs to victors, as well as vanquifhed, as blafted every glory, and infinitely over-balanced all advantage poffible to be gained by them. I fhall therefore barely touch upon fuch particulars as may ferve to give a fketch of the character of thofe concerned in them.

The ardour fhown by the fubaltern officers and private men, when they received orders for landing, was impoffible to be accounted for from any other principle than *difregard to a life deftitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it*; a remark which, to the humane wifdom of fome, may feem to juftify the deficiency and badnefs of every kind of provifion made for their fupport; while thofe, whofe more exalted rank may be thought to animate them with a fenfe of honour and ambitious hope, and who therefore do not want fuch an incitement to defperation, enjoy a luxury fcarce to be reconciled with the confufion of fuch an unfettled ftate.—But to return.

The-

The remainder of that, and all the next day, was taken up in making preparations for landing the troops, which was effected under cover of the night, when some were drowned in approaching an unknown shore in the dark, some killed by the enemy, and more by their own men, in the tumult and confusion of such scenes.

In the same manner was the siege of the town carried on, manifold more of the assailants falling every hour by the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and against which no proper provision had been made, though they had been destined to meet its fiercest fury, by diseases caused by the badness of every necessary of life, and above all by the misconduct of their leaders, than by all the efforts of the enemy, all the arts which the ingenuity of man could devise, for the destruction of his own unhappy species.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himself at the feet of his master, to prefer an extraordinary request. The History of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD.

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to such scenes of horror, by an affair that shewed, in a striking light, the force of passions more natural to the heart of man.

As my master, who was the soul of the enterprize, was standing one night to see the effect of a battery which he had caused to be raised on an eminence,

eminence, that commanded a particular quarter of the town, (for not content with performing his own duty in his proper station by sea, he literally fulfilled his promise to his friend the General, and directed the operations by land also in his name), a youth, who had made his escape from the garrison, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though sufficient to terrify any being capable of terror, threw himself at his feet in agonies of distress.

My master, whose heart was warmed with that generous compassion which is inseparable from true courage, was struck at the sight; and, raising him from the ground, bade him declare the nature of his distress, and expect every assistance to which he was entitled by the sacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by these words, the youth raised his head, and, fixing his eyes upon my master with a look inexpressibly supplicating, "O stop your "fire, gracious Chief," said he, pressing his lips passionately to the hand that had raised him, and on which he still hung, "stop your fire in that "fatal direction, where it can hurt only inno-"cence and virtue. That building, against which "it is levelled, is not a part of the fortifications, "the destruction of which can be of any service "to you. It is a convent dedicated to the *Virgin* "*Mother of God*, and at this time contains all "that my soul holds dear, all that is beautiful "and virtuous under heaven."

Though his youth, beauty, and distress, interested every one present in the supplicant's favour, the nature of his suit must necessarily have prevented his success. But an accident saved him from the pain of being refused; the powder which

was to serve the guns somehow catching fire, and destroying the greatest part of the battery, in the very instant he spoke.

Not all the horrors of such a scene could suppress the joy he felt at an event so favourable to his hopes. "Heaven has interfered," exclaimed he in an ecstacy, "Heaven has interfered to save "her, and man will not presume to oppose its "pleasure."

The enthusiastic manner in which he said this, struck my master. "Restrain your passions for a "few moments," said he, "till I have leisure "to attend more particularly to you; and then, "if you can convince me of the truth of what "you say, your request shall be complied with. "Far be it from me to hurt those hapless votaries "of religion. *Britons* seek other objects of their "valour."—He then gave the necessary orders for repairing the battery; and, desiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ship, where he treated him with every mark of politeness and compassion.

As soon as they had taken some refreshment, my master made a sign to every one else to retire; and addressing himself to the youth, in the most humane manner, desired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into such imminent danger, in order to prefer a suit, of the success of which there was so little probability.

The youth for some moments hung down his head, abashed; then, with a sigh that seemed to burst his heart, "It is my duty, most generous "Chief," said he, "to give you the information "you require, however painful the task may be "*to me*; especially as your condescending to lis-

"ten

"ten to the ſtory of my misfortunes awakes an "hope, that you will be moved by them to grant "a requeſt on which depends my life.

"My name is *Alphonſo*. My father, *Don Pedro*, "bears an honourable command in the forces "which defend yonder city againſt your arms, "but glories more in the honour of being de-"ſcended from the noble family of *Guzman*, "which has preſerved its blood pure from every "debaſing mixture, ſince the beginning of time, "in the mountains of *Caſtile*, and produced a "race of heroes, whoſe fame has filled the world.

"When my father arrived at an age fit to "bear arms, as none of the powers of *Europe* "dared to provoke the wrath of *Spain*, diſdaining "a life of inglorious peace, he entered into the "forces ſent hither to reduce ſuch of the rebel-"lious natives as ſtill preſumed to refuſe ſubmiſ-"ſion to the monarch of the *Spaniſh* worlds, "where he ſignalized himſelf ſo eminently, that, "at the end of ſeven years, his merits were re-"warded with a commiſſion, ſigned by the Vice-"roy himſelf, in the name of the King.

"Such a diſtinguiſhed honour gave weight to "the addreſſes which he had for ſome time paid "to the only daughter of *Don Alonzo Garcias*, "who was a native of *Arragon*, and had been "ſent over by the King to fill the important of-"fice of Secretary to the Receiver of his Re-"venues

"From this marriage, ſo honourable to both "parties, I have the happineſs to derive my "birth, if it can be called an happineſs to be "born only to misfortunes.

"As I was the ſole hope of two ſuch illuſtrious "houſes, no pains were ſpared to give me an e-

" ducation ſuitable to my birth; the great ex-
" ploits of my anceſtors, the antiquity, and un-
" tainted nobility of my blood, were continually
" repeated to me, to excite emulation, and inſpire
" me with proper ſentiments of honour. Such
" care ſeemed the ſureſt means to procure happi-
" neſs; but the wiſdom of man ſtrives in vain a-
" gainſt the decrees of fate.

" In the neighbourhood of my father's houſe,
" there lived a merchant named *Don Antonio*,
" between whoſe family and ours there was the
" cloſeſt intimacy; an intimacy mutually advan-
" tageous, the countenance of a perſon of my
" father's conſequence being an honour to his
" friend, who never omitted thoſe returns of gra-
" titude, which his wealth often gave him an op-
" portunity of making.

" *Don Antonio* had an only daughter, whoſe
" being heireſs to his great fortune was the leaſt
" bleſſing Heaven had beſtowed upon her. O
" my *Olivia!* ſhall I ever behold you more? May
" I yet raiſe my hopes ſo high as to think of cal-
" ling you mine?"

At theſe words a flood of tears choaked his ut-
terance; my maſter took the opportunity to go
out, and give ſome orders to his officers; and on
his return, the youth proceeded.

" *Don Antonio*'s daughter and I being nearly of
" the ſame age, the tender connection of infant
" fondneſs grew up between us, and improved
" with our ripening years. The attention of my
" father was too much engroſſed by his military
" cares, to take notice of our attachment; and my
" mother was ſo ſenſible of the many perfections
" of *Olivia*, that, far from diſcouraging, ſhe pro-
" moted it by every means in her power, dwell-
" ing

" ing continually on her praiſes, and ſuggeſting " to me ſuch little offices of affection and reſpect " as were ſuited to our ages, and moſt likely to " make an impreſſion on her tender heart.

" Nor did the father of *Olivia* (ſhe had loſt her " mother in her infancy), ſhew any diſſatisfaction " at a paſſion which could not eſcape his notice; " influenced moſt probably by a ſenſe of the ho- " nour which he ſhould derive from ſuch an al- " liance.

" In this happy ſtate we lived, till I entered on " my fifteenth year, when my father thought it " proper for me to learn the art of war, in order " to qualify me for ſuch military promotions as I " was entitled to by my birth; and for that pur- " poſe, gave me notice to prepare myſelf to march " with ſome troops, which were going to rein- " force a garriſon in the moſt diſtant part of the " kingdom.

" Though my heart glowed with all the ambi- " tion and deſire of glory, which my noble blood " muſt naturally inſpire, the thought of being ſe- " parated from *Olivia*, overbalanced every other " conſideration. In the firſt emotions of my " ſoul, therefore, I threw myſelf at my father's " feet, and raſhly owned my paſſion, imploring " him, as he regarded my life, to make me happy " in the poſſeſſion of my love, before he attempt- " ed parting us, even for a moment.

" It is impoſſible to deſcribe his rage on this " unhappy diſcovery. Spurning me from him " with his foot, Degenerate wretch! (ſaid he, " when his wrath permitted him to ſpeak) dege- " nerate wretch! to ſtain the honour of your blood " by thinking of an alliance with the daughter of " a perſon of whoſe family you have no know-

"ledge! (for, in all the intercourse of intimacy, "the father of *Olivia* had never discovered in "what part of *Spain* he had been born; nor could "the recital of illustrious pedigrees, the constant "topic of discourse among the noble, ever incite "him to an emulative mention of his own)—— "Hence! Fly my sight this moment; nor ever "presume to appear before me again, till you have "conquered this disgraceful passion.

"I knew the inflexibility of my father's tem-"per too well to attempt making any reply, even "would the fulness of my heart have permitted "me. I retired therefore without speaking a "word, and going to my mother, informed her "of my distress, which she strove to alleviate by "every expression of tenderness and consolation, "promising to exert all her influence, as soon as "the first heat of his wrath should be allayed, to "prevail upon him to consent to my suit."

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA's *father is taken up by the Inquisition, and herself put into a convent; on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in despair to* CHRYSAL's *master, to make a very odd request, which he grants at length, and also promises him his assistance to obtain his mistress.*

"THOUGH I received some encouragement "from these assurances, I could not forbear "going, in the boding of my heart, to acquaint "*Olivia* with what had happened, but in the most

"delicate

" delicate terms. Her affliction was not leſs than " mine. She ſaw the ſincerity of my love, and " in the tenderneſs of ſuch a ſcene yielded to my " intreaties, and plighted her faith to me by the " moſt ſacred vows.

" Comforted by the thought that ſhe could not " now be torn from me, I returned home, where " I found my mother fulfilling her promiſe, and " pleading with my father in my behalf. As " their earneſtneſs made them ſpeak aloud, I " could not reſiſt the natural deſire of liſtening " to a debate of ſuch importance to my hopes. " She urged, with all the ſtrength of reaſon, the " abſurdity of thinking a family diſhonoured by " the admiſſion of a female, and enforced her ar- " guments with the examples even of ſovereigns; " ſhe inſiſted on the beauty, virtues, and fortune " of *Olivia*, which made her worthy of the moſt " honourable alliance; and concluded with ſay- " ing, how much better it would be for us all to " have me married to a perſon whoſe wealth " would enable us to ſpend the remainder of our " lives in plenty and happineſs, than to continue " ſtruggling with every miſery of poverty, merely " to indulge a falſe ill-grounded pride.

" My father had liſtened to the former part of " what ſhe ſaid with an appearance of atten- " tion; but the moment ſhe mentioned his pover- " ty, he loſt all patience. Forbear, mean, mer- " cenary woman!" (ſaid he ſtamping his foot upon the ground with a violence that ſhook the houſe) " Forbear to tempt my wrath by ſuch baſe inſinu- " ations. Did ever a *Caſtilian* think poverty an " hardſhip, or put riches in competition with his " honour? Such ſentiments may ſuit an *Arrago-* " *nian*, but are beneath me. I ſee the ſource of

"the wretch's degeneracy! My blood never could "have stooped to such meanness, had it not been "mixed with yours."——

"Saying this, he flung out of the room, and "finding me at the door, mark me, thou disgrace "to my blood!" (said he with a look that appalled "my soul) "If ever I hear more of this affair, I "swear by the offended honour of all my ances- "tors, to sacrifice every one concerned in my be- "ing offered such an affront."

"What I felt at hearing this dreadful denun- "ciation, may be easily conceived. I swooned a- "way, nor recovered my senses till several hours "after, when I found my mother weeping over "me, in the bitterness of resentment and grief.

"As soon as she perceived that I was come to "myself, she strove to comfort me, by repeating "her former promises, to the accomplishment of "which, she was now farther impelled, by her "resentment of the reflections which my father "had thrown upon her country.

"But an unforeseen misfortune blasted all our "hopes, before she had time to make another "effort.

"The father of *Olivia* having had occasion to "go to *England*, on some affairs in the course of "his extensive dealings, was so taken with the "people of that country, that, after his return, he "never omitted any opportunity of vindicating "them from the injurious aspersions of those who "spoke only from prejudice, and without proper "information.

"This attachment naturally raised the jealousy "of the clergy; but as he confined his approba- "*tion* merely to their moral and social virtues, "*without* ever saying a word in vindication of

"their

"their religious tenets, they contented themselves "with cautioning him against misplacing his "praise, and telling him, that *there could be no* "*virtue where the true faith was not; and therefore* "*those actions, with which he was dazzled, were no* "*more than shining sins*: And they were thus "mild in their reprehension, as he was remark-"ably punctual in the profession and practice of "all the rites and doctrines prescribed by the holy "church.

"But this lenity lasted not long. On the break-"ing out of the present war with *England*, some "persons who envied the success with which his "honest industry had been rewarded, raised a sus-"picion in the governor, of his holding an impro-"per correspondence with the enemy, to which "his former regard for them seemed to give an "appearance of probability.

"Bold in conscious innocence he denied the "charge, nor could the strictest enquiry procure "the least proof of it: But in the course of their "search a discovery was unhappily made, that in-"volved him in ruin, if possible, more dreadful; "a number of books, containing opinions con-"trary to the Catholic Faith, being found in his "possession, concealed among some of his goods.

"In vain did he allege that they belonged not "to, nor could possibly have been known of by "him, the goods among which they had been "concealed having been landed but a few days "before out of an *English* ship, which had been "taken by a *Spanish* man of war, in her passage to "one of their own colonies, where such books "were openly allowed of, and sold to him un-"opened, as they still remained.

" But evident as the truth of this was, *the Holy* " *Office*, to whose jurisdiction the affair belonged, " would not admit of any such excuse. They in" stantly seized the unhappy man, and hurrying " him away to their own prison, took possession of " all his wealth, and forced his helpless daughter " into yonder convent.

" This misfortune, which deprived me of the " wretch's poorest consolation, the liberty of com" plaining, drove me to despair. I pined in si" lence; and was beginning to meditate on laying " down a life, that was become a burden to me, " when my father calling me to him one morn" ing, The time is come!" (said he smiling fiercely) " that will prove the blood of *Guzman*. The " evil genius of the *English* has prompted them " to come, and seek their deaths here. The " most noble governor has not only promoted me " this day to the command of a company in the " forces destined for the defence of this city, but " also, in respect to my family, has appointed you " to be my lieutenant. Let this arouse you to a " sense of yourself! Consider what you owe to " your country, and to your name! Every feebler " passion flies at the manly voice of war."

" Languid as my soul was, I could not hear this " news, without joy, especially as it opened me " a prospect of meeting honourably that death, " which was now my only hope. Accordingly, " as soon as the enemy appeared, I courted danger " with such eagerness, that my father, in spite of " all his magnanimity, more than once desired me " to restrain a courage that arose to an excess.

" But even death itself is deaf to the wretch's " *call*. Nothing material happened to me, till the " *battery*, to which I came to you, opened upon

" the

" the convent, when the thought of my *Olivia's*
" danger of being buried in its ruins, drove me to
" madneſs. I inſtantly flew thither, and imagin-
" ing that ſuch circumſtances bore down all re-
" gard to rules calculated for times of peace, de-
" manded entrance to convey the inhabitants to
" ſome place of ſafety: But what was my aſtoniſh-
" ment to hear, the governor had given the ſtrict-
" eſt orders, that not a ſoul ſhould be admitted to
" ſtir, committing to the immediate hand of hea-
" ven the protection of its peculiar votaries!

" Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no
" milder name, broke every bond of duty and al-
" legiance. I abjured all farther connection with
" ſo cruelly inſenſible a monſter; and recollect-
" ing the many exalted inſtances of true genero-
" ſity which the unhappy father of *Olivia* had told
" me of the *Engliſh*, I reſolved to apply myſelf to
" them, and try whether I could not obtain that
" ſafety for the beloved of my ſoul, which I could
" not hope from him, whoſe duty it was to pro-
" tect her.

" This, moſt illuſtrious chief, is the ſtory of my
" misfortunes; the cauſe of that conduct which
" which appeared ſo ſtrange to you. If you grant
" my ſuit, you will be amply rewarded by the
" conſcious approbation of your own mind. You
" will merit the bleſſing of heaven on your un-
" dertakings, by ſparing the moſt perfect of its
" works! And, may I preſume to add! you will
" attach to you an heart that is incapable of de-
" ceit! Through every viciſſitude of life will I
" attend your ſteps, the faithful ſervant of your
" fate."

The brightneſs of truth breaks through every
cloud, and forces conviction. " I grant your re-

" queſt;"

"quest;" (said my master with a smile of consolation and encouragement) "The convent shall be spar-"ed. Nor is that all. If success crowns my "hopes, I will also use every means in my power "to restore your *Olivia* to your arms."

The joy which the youth felt on hearing these words, is not to be described. "O generous *Eng-"lishman!*" (said he, throwing himself at my master's feet once more, and kissing them in rapture) "you must succeed! Heaven will prosper every "enterprize conducted with such virtue."

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL'*s master's sparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquished of articles of capitulation. The only business of a general.* CHRYSAL'*s master performs his promise to* ALPHONSO, *into whose service* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his mistress, whose father is set at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of some* ENGLISH *Sailors. Conclusion of the story of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

ACCORDING to his promise, the next night the battery was repaired, my master gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he soon found the reward of his generosity, one of the first bombs which was thrown setting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a considerable part of the fortifications.

Animated by this success to a degree of phrensy, the besiegers pushed on their attacks with

ſuch irreſiſtible fury, under the directions of my maſter, (whoſe impetuoſity bore down all obſtacles, and made amends, though at a dear expence of blood, as well for his own ignorance in a ſpecies of war foreign to that which he had been bred, as for that of thoſe whoſe particular buſineſs it was) that, *in ſpite of the accumulated havock of war and diſeaſe, of want, and blunders worſe than all*, they at length overcame the obſtinacy of the beſieged, and compelled them to propoſe delivering up the city on terms, the eſtabliſhing of which was readily agreed to, *as they ſaved the plunder from the ſoldiers of the victorious commanders*, at the ſame time that they protected the perſons of the vanquiſhed from licentious outrage.

The moment the garriſon offered to capitulate, my maſter flew with the news to his friend the general, and embracing him in a tranſport of joy, "At length (ſaid he) the moment is come, that "makes our fortunes for ever. The city is our "own. Go; and exert the plenitude of your "authority in making ſuch terms as ſhall enable "us to ſupport the dignity of our birth and rank, "without being any longer obliged to languiſh "in ſlaviſh dependence on miniſterial favour."

"That I will! (anſwered the general) that I "will, my deareſt friend! Doubt not my acquitting myſelf properly for the pleaſing taſk! I "have been long prepared for it. It was the ſole "motive for my ſoliciting the command; nor has "any thing elſe entered into my thoughts ſince I "obtained it, but making terms, and dividing the "ſpoil; that is, *deviſing how to ſwell our own* "*ſhares upon the diviſion.* I have calculated every "thing to the greateſt nicety, and will ſhew you "ſuch ſtrokes as ſhall ſurprize you. The only bu-

" *ness of a general is to calculate contributions, and*
" *divide plunder.*"

Though my master was sufficiently eager to acquire wealth, he could not approve of the profession of such sentiments. He hasted away, therefore, without making any reply, to the place of action, to be ready in case of any accident, never thinking he had done any thing while any thing remained for him to do.

Much as such scenes engrossed his attention, he did not forget his promise to the *Spanish* youth, but ordering him a guard of soldiers, bade him go, as soon as the gates should be delivered up, and secure the convent where his *Olivia* was confined, from any accident which might happen on such an occasion in spite of all their care; gave him at the same time a purse of gold, *in which I was*, to answer any present necessities, with directions to apply to him again, if he should have any farther need of his assistance.

My new master did not want to have such a commission repeated. He kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard assigned him with the most liberal promises, flew, the moment the gates of the city were opened, to the convent, and demanded his *Olivia* with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the sight of the guard removed every objection, and she was instantly delivered to him.

The meeting of these young lovers was most affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in ecstasy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fulness of their hearts by a flood of tears.

Recovering himself at length, " Come, my
" *Olivia*,"

"*Olivia*," (said *Alphonso*, taking her hand) "let "us leave this place. Let us go"——

"O whither," (interrupted she, starting wildly) "Whither shall I go? I have no home;—no fa-"ther to receive me."——

"My home is yours;" (answered *Alphonso*, embracing her most tenderly) "We will go to "the house of my father, who cannot persist in "his cruelty when he is informed how signally "Heaven has interfered in our favour, and there "we will consult on the means proper for pro-"curing the deliverance of *Antonio*. I have a "protector among the conquerors, the most ge-"nerous of mankind, who will not refuse his as-"sistance on such an occasion."

These words comforted *Olivia* with an hope, for the accomplishment of which she was indebted to another cause.

The way from the convent to the house of *Alphonso*'s father leading them by the prison of the Inquisition, *Olivia* was so affected at the sight of it, that she swooned away in the arms of *Alphonso*. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarrassment, while they were in the midst of which, a body of *English* seamen, who had slipt away from their officers, and were roving about merely from curiosity, and without intention of doing mischief, but ready to join any that should fall in their way, happening to come by, no sooner understood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for some moments as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, "Hallo, "boys! What say you? Shall we bail the gentle-"woman's father? Mayhap there may be some "of our countrymen in the bilboes along with

"him! Damn my eyes and limbs, but it would "be good *fun* to set them all free! I fancy the "inquisitors will not refuse our bail; if they do, "I should be glad to pick a quarrel with them; "I hate them mortally ever since I saw them roast "some poor *Smouches* at *Lisbon*, because they "would not eat pork. Come, chear away, my "hearts of oak! All hands aloft, and to work."

These words were like fire given to a mine. He had scarce finished, when the thoughtless creatures without more ado ran to the prison, and while some of them were forcing in the gates, the rest mounting on each others shoulders, climbed over the walls.

The moment *Olivia*, now recovered from her swoon, saw the prison open, "Now is the time, "*Alphonso!*" (said she) "Now is the time to set "my father free."—

The hint was sufficient. *Alphonso* turned directly to the guard, perceiving by their looks that they were willing to assist him, "I go, my love!" (said he) "But where shall I leave you in safety "till I return? such a place cannot be fit for your "delicacy."

"Speak not of leaving me!" (interrupted she eagerly) "I will go with you! No delicacy shall "interfere with such a duty."——

On her saying this, they all entered the prison, where the seamen were shouting, and skipping about like so many wild creatures, and setting all the prisoners at liberty wherever they went.

The secrets of this prison-house are too horrid for description. I shall therefore draw a veil over them at this time, especially as another occasion will lead me into the same scenes again, when the representation will be more interesting.

No

No words can convey an idea of the tenderness of the meeting between *Olivia* and her father, whom *Alphonso* and she readily found out. As soon as they had indulged the first transports of their joy, she informed him briefly how much they were indebted to *Alphonso* for their present happiness. Though her father was not at a loss for the motive of such generosity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and besought Heaven to reward his virtue.

"The happiness of serving those most dear to "us," (said *Alphonso*, who had not the same command of his temper) "is its own reward. "*Olivia* and her father have a right to every "thing in my power. But let us leave this "place, the sight of which appals my soul. Let "us go to the house of my father."—

"Lead on, my children," (answered *Olivia*'s father) "I follow willingly, and not without hope "of reconciling my friend to our general happi-"ness."

When they went out of the prison, they found the sailors employed in executing a piece of justice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the prison, without doing or designing mischief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the instruments of torture, the sight of which incensed them to such a degree, that they instantly resolved to make the inquisitors themselves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehensive of what might happen, had prudently made their escape by a secret passage, as soon as the prison had been forced. Disappointed thus in their design, the sailors took all the horrid *apparatus*, with the habits, ensigns,

books, &c. of the office, and piling them up in the court, set fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three chears for the honour of Old *England;* after which they marched off in quest of more *fun*, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When *Alphonso* arrived at his father's house, he found his mother just sinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, she started up, and running to him, "O my son, my son!" (exclaimed she, clasping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his bosom) "Heaven has heard "my prayers! I am not childless, though I am "a widow." "A widow!" (exclaimed *Alphonso*) "Forbid it, Heaven! O my father!"——

"Yes, *Alphonso!*" (contiued she, raising her head from his bosom, which she had bedewed with her tears) "Your father died, as he lived, with "honour, fighting valiantly by the side of his ge-"neral, in defence of his country. But what "do I see?" (casting her eyes upon *Olivia*, her father, and the guard, whom her surprise had prevented her taking notice of before) "*Olivia!* "*Antonio!*—And who are these strange men?— "But, alas, I know too well!—O my son! art "thou then a prisoner to the enemies who slew "thy father?—Am I to lose thee again the mo-"ment thou art returned?"——

"No, my mother!" (answered he) "I am no "prisoner! They are our protectors, given by the "most generous of men, who has thus restored "us to each other. O that my father were alive, "to make our happiness compleat!"

"Since Heaven has appointed otherwise," (said *Antonio*, going up to *Alphonso*'s mother, who was weeping with *Olivia*, on whose neck she had fallen)

ſen) "it is our duty to ſubmit to its pleaſure. "The circumſtances of our lives make it impro-"per for us to think of living any longer here. "But that ſhould not diſcourage us: the virtuous "find an home every where. We will remove "to the dominions of the *Engliſh*, where I have "lodged in honeſt hands fortune ſufficient to "make our retreat happy. Under the protection "of their laws, a man's mind is at liberty, and "his wealth is ſecure. Mine was my only crime "here; but I was aware of ſuch an attack, and "had removed it beyond the reach of thoſe who "impiouſly made religion the pretext for depriv-"ing me of it. Were my friend *Don Pedro* liv-"ing, I would have removed the objections which "his high notions of honour made to an alliance "with my family, and prevailed upon him to ac-"company us." * Theſe words comforted the mother of *Alphonſo*, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus ſettled, the guard was diſmiſſed with profeſſions of the higheſt gratitude to the generous chief, which *Antonio* and *Alphonſo* propoſed waiting on him to pay in perſon, as ſoon as he ſhould be more at leiſure; and, to reward the ſoldiers for their attendance, *Alphonſo* gave them the purſe of gold he had received from his benefactor, and *in which I was*, in the diviſion of which I fell to the lot of the ſerjeant who commanded them, who, looking upon me as an earneſt of the vaſt treaſures he was to receive as his ſhare of the ſpoil, went away with an happy heart to join his fellows, who were now in full poſſeſſion of the city.

* The ſtory of *Antonio* followed here, but was ſo blotted and imperfect in the M. S. that the Editor was obliged to omit it.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes some striking remarks on a state of absolute liberty. Disappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural consequences.* CHRYSAL'S *master, going to take a taste of the pleasures of affluence, is flammed out of his treasure by a sutler, into whose service* CHRYSAL *enters.*

THE conduct of man, in such scenes as this, where he thinks himself at liberty to follow the instantaneous impulse of his own will, without apprehension of immediate punishment, shows the groundless vanity of those, who boast so loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the necessity of coercive laws.

It is true, no people ever abused this liberty less than the *English*, who scorn to inflict upon others that oppression from which their laws protect themselves; as, on the other hand, slaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the most imperious tyrants: but still, the circumstances attending even the most moderate exertion of it, are too shocking for dispassionate description; wherefore I shall wave the painful task.

As soon as some degree of order was established in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the spoil, *a work for which they all showed their capacity in the most remarkable manner*, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the share of each of the private men, who had literally borne the heat and burthen of the day, being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morsel of bread, *and not the fifty thousandth part* of what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxu-

ry, and iſſued their orders from places of ſafety, modeſtly owned to have reſerved for each of themſelves.

Nor was the caſe of the inferior officers, who executed theſe orders, any better, their ſhares not being ſufficient to defray the extraordinary expences which they had been at, to provide for the enterprize, much leſs the extraordinary expences of living, where the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life were ſubject to the moſt exorbitant impoſitions of an avaricious and arbitrary will; ſo that all they gained by their conqueſt was, to exchange the dangers of war for the miſeries of want.

This diſappointment of the hopes which alone had ſupported their ſpirits, through hardſhips almoſt beyond the power of nature to ſupport, filled up the black liſt of the calamities which attended this enterprize, aggravating by deſpair the diſeaſes to which the climate ſubjected the victors, to ſuch a degree, that their loſs, after their conqueſt, exceeded many times that which they had ſuffered in the ſiege from ſo many combined cauſes.

To the truth of this repreſentation, which, to unexperienced ſpeculation, may appear too ſeverely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army, which returned to their exhauſted country, bore a melancholy teſtimony.——But, to quit theſe diſagreeable reflections—

Such a treaſure as I was (a greater much than he had ever been poſſeſſed of before), raiſed the ſpirits of my maſter, the ſerjeant, ſo high, that he went directly to a ſutler's tent to take a taſte of the good living, which he thought himſelf ſecure of, for the remainder of his days.

On his entering the tent, and aſking what entertainment he could have, the ſutler, ignorant of his *wealth,* anſwered with a curſe, that he had

none

none for such shabby fellows as he, and took him by the shoulder to thrust him out. Provoked at such an indignity to a person of his present consequence, my master turned upon him, and pulling *me* out of his pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another?

The sight of the gold instantly changed the sutler's whole behaviour. "My worthy friend! (said "he, shaking the serjeant by the hand), I beg "your pardon. I actually did not perceive whom "I spoke to, I am so hurried about. But come "along with me, and I'll make you amends. I "have a nice leg of a fowl, which was bespoke "for your colonel; but *first come first served*, as "the saying is; so here it is for you; and here is "a bottle of wine as cool as if it came but this "minute from *Iceland*."

My master was not proof against such an invitation. He *fell to*, without more ceremony; and, when he had finished his feast, calling to know what he had to pay, the sutler answered, Two doubloons.

"Two doubloons! Two devils, (said the ser-"jeant, staring at such a demand), for a leg of "an old hen as black as hell, and lean as *Beelze-"bub*, and a bottle of rot-gut sour cyder? No, "no, friend! no such tricks for me. I am not "to be flammed so neither."

"Why, there it is now!" answered the sutler, not much pleased with my master's looks; "the "moment a man grows rich he grows covetous. "I received the same for the other leg of that "very fowl this moment, from an ensign, who, "by the same token, left his laced waistcoat in "*pawn* for half the money. But I will not fall

"out

"out with you for such a trifle, as I expect more
"of your custom; so e'en give me what you
"please. You can't think one doubloon too
"much, I am sure: But you shall make it up an-
"other time."

Such an argument could not be resisted. The serjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to consider how he should lay out to the best advantage, the treasures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL'*s new master. The right way not to suffer by making mistakes. A curious conversation between* CHRYSAL'*s master and two persons of consequence, lays open the secrets of some interesting affairs. He makes up a foolish dispute by a sensible toast.*

I WAS now entered into a service, which opened to me so many various views of human folly, vice and wretchedness, as made the prospect painful.

The manner in which my new master got me into his possession, shewed his character in a light sufficiently strong. But I soon had the satisfaction of seeing, that, with all his address and imposition, he was himself no more than the tool of the impositions of superiors, who scarce left him the poorest gleanings to pick up, after all their plenteous harvest: The just and constant fate of all such wretches.

The

The continued hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falsely alleged it as an excuse for his treatment of my late master, the serjeant, was really sufficient to excuse any inadvertency, or blunder, and must have caused many, in any one whose ideas were not settled in one certain course, out of which it was impossible to divert them, of which his customers, whose attentions were not so distracted, might be apt to take advantage. But I soon found, that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having such an invariable bias to his own interest, that every mistake naturally fell to that side, for which, upon detection, his hurry was a ready and probable excuse.

The serjeant had scarce left him, when two persons entered, one of whom I directly knew to be my old master, the admiral's agent for *secret services*, as I soon found the other to be in the same important station with the general.

My master, who was not at a loss for the occasion of their visit, led them into the most private place in the tent, and, setting before them a bottle of *his best*, proceeded to business. "Mr. Admiral, to your good health! Mr. General, my very hearty service to you!" (said he, filling a brimmer, and addressing each by the title of his master, as he shook them by the hand). "Here is a good conclusion of the campaign to us. I was impatient for your coming, to know how I should go on. Here have been several officers with me already, for credit on the score of their prize-money; for the length of the siege, and the dearness of every thing, has not left them a penny, nor any thing to pawn for one. I have got as many clothes, and things of all kinds, as would serve to set up a *Monmouth-*

"street

"*street* merchant. If the place had held out but "a few days longer, the poor devils must have "done duty in *Buff*. Hah! hah! hah!"

"And the properest dress for them, (returned "*the Admiral*): Who wants any clothes in such "a climate as this? I am sure I go naked half "my time, though I keep under cover, and have "nothing to do to heat me."

"Very true, (answered my master); but naked "and hungry both, are not quite so well; and, "when their moveables were all gone after their "money, I don't know who would have supplied "them."

"Then let them live on their allowance! (said "the General): They who can't afford to pay for "better, should be content with that."——

"To die upon it, you should say, (interrupted "my master): I am sure the stores laid in are "such as no one can live upon, that has ever "known what living was. For my part, I won-"der the contractors were not ashamed to supply "such wretched stuff of all kinds. They must "have no conscience at all, who can do such "things."——

"Conscience! hah! hah! hah! who ever heard "a sutler speak of conscience before? (said the "admiral). And pray, my conscientious friend, "what do you charge a bottle for this most excel-"lent wine of yours?"——

"For this wine? (answered my master, palat-"ing it two or three times), I charge for this "wine only *a pistole*; and let me tell you, that is "not so much, considering every thing. This "Burgundy cost me five shillings a bottle, prime "cost: and, when you compute every expence, "you'll find, that my profit is nothing extraordi-

"nary;

"nary; nothing at all in comparison of what o-
"thers get."——

"No! to be sure, (replied the General), your
"conscience won't suffer you to do as they do!
"you are too good a man——"

"Too good a *Christian*, you should say, (inter-
"rupted the admiral), as appears by your *baptiz-*
"*ing* your wine so piously: Hah! hah! hah! Pray
"what did the water cost, that is mixed with this
"same Burgundy? I hope that did not stand
"you in five shillings a bottle too? Hah! hah!
"hah!"—

"It is very well gentlemen, (returned my ma-
"ster with a sneer); you are pleased to be merry.
"But, if I had not some way to make out mat-
"ters, I could never pay the exorbitant taxes
"which are squeezed from me, by some people
"whom I shan't name; and so here's my service
"to you both once more. When you lower *your*
"*composition*, I'll lessen the quantity of water and
"mend my wine. Hah! hah! hah!"——

"And so you had need, (said the general) to
"make it drinkable: As it is, I wonder it does
"not poison every one that tastes it. When I
"lived at the *Shakespeare*, we did not give worse
"than this to our company after they were dead
"drunk!"

"Worse than this! (added the admiral) If you
"had given me half so bad, I should have broken
"your head with the bottle."

"Broken my head!" (returned the general)
"fine words truly! When you were a blue-nosed
"journey-man barber, and used to come to me to
"beg broken victuals, and bottoms of bottles, you
"spoke in another tone."

"And when I was, Sir," (replied the admiral) "I had a good trade, and never looked upon my-"self as upon a level with the pimp of a tavern."

"And yet that pimping made you what you are "now!" (retorted the general, rising up in a paſ-ſion) "you forget perhaps how you begged of me "to introduce your ſiſter to the admiral, by which "means you got into his ſervice! This is a fine re-"turn indeed."

"And you forget too," (ſaid the admiral ſtart-ing from his ſeat, and catching at the bottle) "that it was that ſame ſiſter of mine, who got you "into the general's ſervice, if you go to that, ſo "that I think the obligation is equal."

"Gentlemen! dear gentlemen!" (interrupted my maſter, clapping an hand to each of their collars) "conſider what you are doing! What will "the world ſay of ſuch a quarrel between gentle-"men, who ought to agree like brothers. For "ſhame! every body will laugh at you! Come, "ſit down, and be good friends, and I'll try if I "have not one bottle of better wine, over which "we'll make up all matters."——Then bringing it, and filling his glaſs, "Come gentlemen," (con-tinued he, ſhaking each of them by the hand) "I'll give you a toaſt that ſhall drown all animo-"ſity: Here is proſperity to pimping! it is the "beſt trade going, and has made us all! aye, and is "practiſed too by people in every ſtation, however "they may affect to turn up their noſes at it. So "let us attend to our buſineſs, and not fall toge-"ther by the ears, for nothing, like a parcel of "dogs about a bare bone. It ſignifies nothing "what we have been: if we mind our *hits* now, "we ſhall all be gentlemen as good as the beſt of "them; and as well reſpected too."

 The

The admiral and general faw the force of what he faid, and pledging his toaft, fhook hands and were as good friends as ever.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myfteries of agency, and convenience of a military government, with fome curious notions of the genteeleft ways of rifing in life.

"WELL, gentlemen," (faid my mafter, who was not pleafed at their jefts upon his liquor, becaufe he could not deny the truth of them) "I "hope that wine pleafes you."

"Aye," (anfwered the admiral) "this is *the* "*right fort*; this is *the thing*; give us this, and "keep the other for officers, and fuch as are not "ufed to better."

"And if it poifons them," (added the admiral) "the public will have the fewer to pay. Now "they have done the bufinefs, let them live or "die as they can, we care not. That's nothing "to us."

"Very true," (faid my mafter) "all we have to "do is to make the moft of them, while they do "live; and therefore I fhould be glad to know, as "I faid before, how far I may venture to go with "them, on the credit of their prize-money; for "as the place was faved from being plundered by "the articles of capitulation, they muft all get "money on their fhares, whether they will or "not; their neceffities are fuch."

"So much the better for us, who can buy their "*fhares*," (anfwered the admiral); "they'll give

"the better bargains. Their neceſſity is our "gain."

"Aye," (replied my maſter) "but I don't find "they intend ſelling. All they propoſe is to mort-"gage."

"Then let them ſee who'll give them money:" (ſaid the general) "No, no! no mortgages for us. "An abſolute ſale, or nothing. We'll have no af-"ter reckonings; no *over-haling* accounts. As to "their being unwilling to ſell, we'll manage that "matter with them. When you have got them "ſufficiently in your books, call for your money; "and as it will be impoſſible for them to pay, ap-"ply to the commander in chief, who will oblige "them to do you juſtice."

"Why, to be ſure, that muſt do!" (anſwered my maſter) "But how far am I to truſt them?"

"This will ſhew you!" (replied the general) "Here is the rate of all their ſhares. Look at "the ſum total. What noble fortunes that would "have made for half a dozen reaſonable men. It "went to my heart to *fritter* it away among ſo "many."

"This, this is the rate of their ſhares!" (ſaid my maſter, not able to conceal his aſtoniſhment, when he looked at the paper which the other gave him) "Is it poſſible that this ſhould be all?"

"Yes," (returned the admiral) "and too much "for them too. More than moſt of them ever "had before, or will make a good uſe of now."

"Why, they'll mutiny, and cut all our throats!" (returned my maſter) "There are ſeveral of them "who owe me almoſt as much as this already. I "thought they would have ten times this ſum, at "leaſt. They'll certainly mutiny, and cut all our "throats."

"Don't you give yourſelf any trouble about "their mutinying!" (ſaid the general) "Do you "mind your buſineſs, and leave us to take care of "that. Their ſpirits will hardly be ſo high: if "you have gone hand over head and truſted them "ſo far, you muſt abide by the loſs. I thought I "gave you a friendly caution about that before."

"And ſo" (returned my maſter) "I am not to "go beyond this rate, you ſay?"

"Not a penny;" (anſwered the admiral) "that "is your rule. Whatever you can bate them down "of that, ſhall be your own."

"That is deducting five *per cent.* agency;" (interpoſed the general) "and five or ten *per cent.* as "you can make your bargain, for prompt-pay-"ment; for we will not appear to have any hand "in the affair, farther than paying you the money. "It muſt not be known that we are concerned in "the leaſt."

"You concerned!" (replied my maſter) "I "don't underſtand you. Are you to be concern-"ed with me in what I buy?"

"Not in the leaſt," (returned the admiral) "any farther than by employing you to act for "us. You ſeem to miſtake the matter entirely. "You are to buy the ſhares for us, according to "this rate, for which we will allow you a proper "agency: And that is all the concern you are to "have in the affair."

"But I ſuppoſe," (ſaid my maſter) "I may buy "on my own account, if I pleaſe."

"Buy on your own account!" (interrupted the general) "Such another word, and you ſhall nei-"ther ſell nor buy any thing here. Are not we "the commanders agents; and do you think they "will ſuffer us to be interloped upon! You may

" be very well content with the profits of your " own business, without thinking to interfere in " ours."

" I ask your pardon, gentlemen!" (said my master, who knew their power too well to dispute with them) " It was only a mistake, I by no " means presume to interfere with you; and shall " be proud to execute your orders, on whatever " terms you think proper. I suppose though our " former *composition* is to end. Provisions will " now come in from every part, so that we can " never think of keeping them up at the former " prices."

" Can't you so?" (answered the general) " that " shall be your own fault then; and your own loss " too, I can tell you. Let provisions come in as " they will, no one shall sell an ounce here with- " out our permission, and that shall be on our " own terms, you may be assured. Our hands " are not tied up by laws. Ours is *a military go-* " *vernment*, in which we can do what we please, " without being accountable to any one. So you " may go on as before."

" But, gentlemen," (replied my master) " you " should consider that the whole odium of this " will fall upon me, as you do not appear in it, " so that I shall lose my character for ever."

" Your character! Hah! hah! hah!" (interrupted the general) " A sutler's character! I shall " never be able to bear the word again; pray, my " good friend, had a sutler ever a character to " lose, that would not be a greater loss to the " finder? Come, here's my service to you. Go " on with your business, and make money, and " never fear suffering by the loss of your charac- " ter. It is time for us to go and settle what

" taxes we ſhall lay upon the different kinds of " merchandize that ſhall be brought here. *Our* " *duties* ſhall be paid, as well as thoſe of any king " of them all. This is our reign; and if we do " not make the moſt of it, we have no one to " blame but ourſelves."

" And as rich as ſo many kings you will be," (ſaid my maſter) " if you can carry off things in " the manner you ſay."

" As to our being rich," (returned the admiral) " that depends entirely upon our own manage- " ment. Our principals, indeed, will be rich e- " nough, which is all they care for; not what be- " comes of us, whom they would have do their " buſineſs for nothing, or next to it. But they ſhall " find themſelves miſtaken. Every thing muſt go " through our hands; and *gold in handling will* " *ſtick to the fingers*, as the ſong ſays. We ſhall " feather our neſts in ſpite of them. They cannot " do without us; and will hardly be fond of call- " ing us to too ſtrict an account, for fear of our " telling tales. To be ſure the great harveſt will " be their's; but we will take toll."

" I don't doubt but you will" (ſaid my maſter) " twice over for fear of miſtake, as the miller does. " Why, you'll make ſuch fortunes that you won't " know what to do with yourſelves."

" Never fear that;" (anſwered the general) " We ſhall not be at a loſs. For my part I deſign to " buy a borough, and puſh my fortune in parlia- " ment: that's the genteeleſt buſineſs a gentle- " man can follow now, and the readieſt way of " advancing in life, and making a family."

" Now, I think otherwiſe," (ſaid the admiral) " and that it is the moſt ungenteel way; ſuch dirty " *jobs* are required for every thing a man gets, that

" it

"it is beneath a gentleman to do them. My "scheme is to buy an *Irish peerage* at once, and "then live splendidly, without troubling myself "about any thing. Or if I should grow tired of "idleness, go into parliament there, and turn "*patriot*, and make speeches for the good of my "country."

"Both your schemes may be very good;" (said my master) "but my ambition is not so high as "either, at least as yet: I will try to get a *con-"tract*; and than I shall not fear making a for-"tune sufficient to do what you propose, or more "if I choose it; without being sneered at for my "folly. You may say what you will, but there "is more to be got by a *contract*, than by every "other way; and therefore it is the genteelest in "my opinion. How many *contractors* have I seen "buy noblemen's fine houses, and members of "parliament's estates, with the profits of a single "campaign? And so, *my Lord*, and you, most "honourable Mr. *Member*, I am your humble ser-"vant."

"Honest Mr. *Contractor*," (replied both at the same time) "Yours.

CHAP. XV.

Affecting consequences of carrying the foregoing schemes into execution; with the conclusion of the character and history of CHRYSAL'S *master.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

AS soon as this worthy pair had left my master, he set about his business of preying upon the

necessities of every one who came near him, with as much keenness as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The transactions I now saw are a pain to memory. For the few first days after their success, the officers, under the same intoxication with my late master, the serjeant, gave a loose to every kind of extravagance, to compensate themselves for the wants and hardships they had suffered. But no sooner had they advanced near the limits prescribed to their credit, than the whole scene changed.

The mention of the amount of their respective shares, was like a clap of thunder bursting over their heads. Their astonishment for some time deprived them of their senses. But when they were able to make a proper enquiry, and found the case to be too true, their rage broke through all bounds, and rose almost to desperation. *The horrors of a jail, the cries of a starving family*, every aggravation of human misery stared them in the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no remedy. Those from whom alone it could proceed, were too much interested to listen to their complaints; and instead of preventing, permitted their authority to be prostituted to complete their ruin, in the manner proposed by their agents; so that the unhappy victims were forced to submit to the terms imposed upon them.

The consequence of this, as I have said before, was, that to drown reflection, they spent whatever trifle remained to them, on concluding the *bargains* which sealed their ruin, in still greater

excesses,

excesses, and so precipitated the distress they feared.

As for the private men, the impositions they suffered, were, if possible, still severer, (though, from their insensibility, perhaps, not so severely felt), as the *management* of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very lowest class of harpies which prey upon an army; so that what remained to them, was too trifling to be of any service even to the very few who struggled with their necessities in order to save it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid scene. This slight sketch will give you a general notion of it, and that is as much as an humane heart can bear. Indeed no description could reach the truth. I shall therefore only just finish the outlines of my master's character, and then pass on to the occurrences in my next service.

The extortions to which he was himself forced to submit, from those in authority, took off every shadow of shame, (to conscience he had long been a stranger), and added double keenness to his natural propensity to extortion, by giving it what he thought the appearance of justice, and provoking him to wreak his resentment upon others, for what he suffered himself from those above his reach.

The opportunities for exerting his talents this way, were infinite, in a profession that is a mystery of iniquity too complicated to be unravelled, too black to be conceived but upon experience, which he had acquired to the most consummate degree, in the gradual progression of his life.

A natural

A natural ſharpneſs of genius, which ought to have been curbed, not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him, when very young, to an attorney, under whom he learned, beſide other valuable qualifications, the nice diſtinction between law and juſtice, ſo as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former: But, encouraged by much ſucceſs, he had at length unluckily happened to go too near theſe boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profeſſion; after ſome common ſteps of deſcent from which, ſuch as *bailiff's follower*, *knight of the poſt*, and *bully to a bawdy-houſe*, he ſtopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the neceſſary arts of *prevaricating*, *lying*, and *evading diſagreeable demands*, the qualifications of his former character, ſoon raiſed him to be his *gentleman*.

In this ſtation, he added to his ſtock of accompliſhments, natural and acquired, *pimping*, *ſervility*, *adulation*, and *an abſolute command of countenance*; on the ſtrength of all which, together with ſome little money, the fruits of his honeſt induſtry, on his maſter's fixing his habitation in a jail, he ſet up a tavern, where his *ſecond-hand politeneſs*, and *cringing behaviour*, ſoon brought him into buſineſs, that enabled him to live better than he could have any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independence.

This ſucceſs, which would have ſatisfied a reaſonable perſon, only raiſed his ambition, and made him deſpiſe his buſineſs. Accordingly, he commenced *wine-merchant*, as more ſuitable to a *gentleman*, in which profeſſion he went on, *till his one-horſe chaiſe*, *his country-houſe*, *and kept miſtreſs*, would have brought him back to his primitive po-

verty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him to ſecret from his creditors, ſomething to try his hand upon in ſome other way, when he pitched upon his preſent occupation of a *ſutler*; in which this account of his life ſhews he was moſt eminently fitted to make a figure.

Thus qualified in himſelf, and ſupported by his employers, he proceeded, making his bargains with a ſucceſs, to which, it may be thought, no regard to honeſty, no ſenſe of compaſſion, was the leaſt impediment. He flattered, profeſſed the higheſt reſpect and attachment, and preſſed his goods upon his deſtined victims, with every inſinuating art, till he got them into his ſnare, when he directly put on all the inſolence of power, and made even ruin ſtill more wretched, by the cruelty with which he drove them to it, and the inſenſibility with which he treated them after. How often have I ſeen him refuſe to truſt a glaſs of what he called wine, to cool the raging thirſt, and comfort the fainting heart of the man, whom, but a day or two before, he had cajoled into the exceſſes which drew him into that diſtreſs!

After ſome days of painful attention to ſuch ſhocking ſcenes, I had the pleaſure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant's ſhip, for ſome liquors, which he, having the addreſs to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers, and all their emiſſaries, had conveyed *impoſt-free* to my maſter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL'*s master swallows a pill, and pleads an important cause without success. A curious method of parrying one false oath by another, with the first oath taken by the master of a merchantman. He shews another instance of his skill in steering clear of perjury, but without his former success. His notion of conscience.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

THE care which I knew to be taken to detect and punish this kind of *illicit* trade, made me wonder at first that it should even be attempted; but I soon found that the danger of such detection, when it depends solely on the confession of those concerned, however forceful the means made use of to extort that confession, is held at nought by a set of people, bred in the grossest ignorance of every principle of moral virtue, or religious obligation, and hardened, by long habit, into contempt of whatever clashes with their interest.

When I came into the possession of my new master, he was going to attend the two *great men* whose conversation with the sutler I have just now related, in obedience to a summons sent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was suited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a considerable time, before they were at leisure to see him; when being admitted to their presence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and *taken his oath*, that he had no *private trade* on board, nor any thing which *was not* contained in that account, they inform-

ed him what *duties* he muſt pay on every article, before he ſhould be permitted to land them.

My maſter, though he was ſufficiently apprized of this before, affected ſurprize, and attempted to expoſtulate with them on the illegality and injuſtice of ſuch a demand, alleging, that the goods had been purchaſed at the higheſt prices, in order to ſend a ſpeedy and effectual ſupply to the troops, who were known to want them, ſo that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray ſuch additional duties; that his owners, not in the leaſt ſuſpecting any ſuch, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities, being of a periſhable nature, muſt be damaged, if not permitted to be landed directly; by which means, not only the merchants would be great loſers, but alſo the troops ſuffer ſeverely for the want of common neceſſaries, which they could not otherwiſe be ſupplied with.

But all he could ſay had no effect. They did not even deign to make him any anſwer, farther than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leiſure to liſten to.

Such a repulſe, however unjuſt in itſelf, and perſonally offenſive in the manner of it, was far from giving my maſter any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the buſineſs of his owners, afforded him an opportunity of carrying on *his own private trade* to better advantage, which no oaths they could deviſe were able to put a ſtop to, as an inſtance or two of his conduct will ſhew.

Some ſuſpicion having ariſen of his commerce with the ſutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was ſummoned to appear before the

the tax-gatherers, *to acquit himſelf by his oath* of ſo heinous an offence.

The ſutler, who knew the conſequence of being convicted, and, with all his knowledge of the world, ſaw no poſſibility of avoiding it, gave himſelf up as ruined: But my maſter ſoon ſhewed him the convenience of a conſcience trained to ſwearing; for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and ſeeing him ſo caſt down, "Chear up brother, (ſaid he), I'll "bring you ſafe through this ſtreight! By the "virtue and contents of this book, (pulling one "out of his pocket, and kiſſing it in form), I "will never ſwear that you have bought any "thing from me; ſo throw off that ſneaking "*Tyburn* look, and come along."

Such an aſſurance naturally gave the ſutler ſome ſpirits, though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the myſtery, and ſhewed him the force of a cuſtom-houſe oath.

As ſoon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter aſſuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the ſtrongeſt colours, and adminiſtering the oath to my maſter, demanded, in an authoritative tone, whether he had not ſold *uncuſtomed* goods to the ſutler, and to what amount? who, not in the leaſt diſconcerted, either by the queſtion, or the manner in which it was put, "Why, look ye, gen-"tlemen, (anſwered he, turning the *quid* in his "cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the "hips with both his hands), as to that affair, by "the virtue of my oath, *if I ſhould ſwear that* "*I ſold him any, I ſhould be forſworn*, and I'll "always try to weather that point if I can."—

As

As there was no more than a general ſuſpicion againſt the criminals, this anſwer ſatisfied the ſagacity of their judges, and they were diſmiſſed with flying colours.

When they were alone, "Well," (ſaid my maſter, ſhaking his friend by the hand) "I told "you I'd bring you off. Let that be an example "to you for the future. *None but fools convict* "*themſelves*, and *none but greater fools expect it.* "I ſhould have little buſineſs in the merchant's "ſervice, if I ſcrupled ſwallowing ſuch a pill as "that every day in my life. No, no! they muſt "be cunning if they can make an oath that will "ſtick in the throat of the captain of a merchant-"man, even if he can't find an opening to ſteer "through, as was the caſe here. We have a "*ſalvo* for ſuch things. *The firſt oath we take as* "*ſoon as we get into employment, is never to ſwear* "*the truth to a cuſtomhouſe officer while we live; ſo* "*that all the oaths they give us go for nothing.*"

But with all his cleverneſs, he ſometimes failed of ſucceſs. A lieutenant of a man of war happening, as he was *rowing guard* one night, to ſee a boat put off from our ſhip, purſued it in hopes of making ſome repriſals for all the extortions he and his brethren daily ſuffered from any one concerned in trade, as he knew it muſt be a *ſmuggler*.

The hope of prize made the crew of the lieutenant's boat pull with ſuch ſpirit, that they gained faſt upon the *chace*, which the others ſeeing, and that it was impoſſible for them to get clear off, they threw their cargo overboard to diſappoint their purſuers of their expected booty, and then ran the boat aſhore to ſave themſelves from being taken, leaving her of courſe to the captors for their trouble, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the ſmugglers was my maſter's ſon, who, in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of thoſe who had been with him, when the father ſtopping him ſhort, "Avaſt!" (ſaid he) "Coil up your tongue, I deſire to have no more "of them. Have you a mind to make me forſwear myſelf when I go to recover my boat? "For have her again you know I muſt, as I can't "get another here, nor carry on any buſineſs "without one."

Accordingly next morning he made a public enquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been ſtolen from his ſhip's ſide, and finding her in the poſſeſſion of the lieutenant, demanded to have her reſtored directly; and, on his refuſal, had him ſummoned before the officers of the cuſtoms, who were judges in ſuch affairs.

As he grounded his claim on her having been taken without his privity, and by perſons unknown to him, he was put to the common teſt of an oath, Whether he knew who had been in her, when ſhe was purſued by the captors? "By the "virtue of *my oath*, gentlemen," (anſwered he, without the leaſt heſitation) "*I do not know one* "*of them.*"

So *direct* an anſwer ſatisfied the judges, who were nowiſe concerned in the affair; but that was not the caſe with the lieutenant: "Hold, Sir!" (ſaid he to my maſter, who was ſheering off, laughing in his ſleeve) "What is that you ſay?"—

"I ſay," (anſwered my maſter, nothing diſconcerted) "that I don't know *one* of them."——

"*One of them!*" (returned the lieutenant, who inſtantly ſaw through his evaſion) "But don't you "*know any* of them though? Take care what you

"ſay!

"say! Perhaps I know more than you think I "do."——

"Why, as to that," (replied my master laughing) "I cannot say so much. Perhaps I may "know some of them."

"How!" (interposed the judge, offended at an answer which he thought shewed a slight to his authority) "Did you not swear this moment that "you did not know one of them?"——

"No more do I," (answered my master) "There "were twelve in the boat, of whom I know only eleven; and sure, in that case, I can safely "swear I do not know *one*, that is *the twelfth* of "them. Ha, ha, ha!"

"Take care, Sir, (replied the judge) how you "attempt to trifle in this manner before us again. "You know the punishment of perjury, if you "should be caught tripping."

"Never fear," (said my master) "I know the "*compass* of my conscience too well for that. I "can steer as near that wind as another. *Thus!* "*thus! and no nearer*, is my trim. I'll never "break an oath; but if I can give it the *go-by* at "the *lee side* thus, by a double meaning, I hope "that's no offence."——

Then turning to the lieutenant, "Well, Sir," (continued he) "it seems *you have carried too much* "*sail for me this trip! But if I meet you upon a* "*wind again, mind your helm, or I may chance to* "*fall aboard you.* However, since I can't have "my boat cheaper, I must e'en come to your "terms: so what do you ask for her?"

To this proposal the lieutenant made no objection: Setting therefore his price, "Zouns!" (said my master) "I believe you have no conscience at

"all, to aſk a man ſo much, and for his own "boat!——

At his mentioning *conſcience*, all preſent ſet up a loud laugh, and repeated the word.

Nothing abaſh'd at which, "You may laugh as "much as you pleaſe, (continued he) but my no-"tion of conſcience is not to aſk out of reaſon "for any thing one has to diſpoſe of; and ſo, "Sir, if you have a mind to part with the boat, "I'll give you half what you aſk; and I ſhould "think even that too much, but that I want her, "and do not know where to get another."

"And as I want to ſell her, and do not know "where to get another purchaſer, (anſwered the "lieutenant) you ſhall have her. Not that I "think ſhe comes very cheap to you upon the "whole neither: You have ſworn well for her at "leaſt."

"As to that matter, (replied my maſter) "that "is my buſineſs, and not yours. Here is your "money, and that is all you need care for."— Saying this, he paid him for the boat, and then walked off, without concern or ſhame.——I here quitted his ſervice, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.*

I SEE you are ſhocked at ſuch flagrant inſtances

of

of profligacy, of bare-faced contempt of every thing moſt ſacred and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature; but that reproach muſt not be confined to thoſe alone who obviouſly incur it. They who from falſe principles of policy give the occaſion, againſt the conviction of reaſon and experience, are at leaſt equally guilty.

The impotency of man to reſiſt temptation, is ſuch that he is taught to pray againſt it. Why then ſhould thoſe who are intruſted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourſe of life, lay ſnares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding?

Appealing to the atteſtation of the Deity, is moſt certainly the higheſt aſſurance poſſible to be given by any being, who has a ſenſe of his dependence on that Deity; nor ſhould ever be given, but on the moſt important occaſions, and in the moſt ſolemn manner; nor accepted, but from ſuch as may be preſumed to underſtand the nature of it.

In ſuch circumſtances it would never be violated. Man is not ſo deſperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inextricable perdition. But when that atteſtation is given lightly, for every trifle, when it is placed in oppoſition to intereſt, and demanded from ſuch as cannot be ſuppoſed to know its conſequence, the reverence which ſhould be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and of courſe the end for which it is thus impiouſly and injudiciouſly proſtituted, diſappointed; and, by that means, the moſt ſacred aſſurance of life rendered void, the bond of ſocial confidence and ſafety broken.

The effects of this abſurd policy of making the obligations of religion the common teſt of truth

on trivial occaſions, and where intereſt is concerned, are more extenſive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engroſs the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them ſee the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reaſon; wherefore the threats and promiſes of religion were found neceſſary to enforce the practice of it: But as the accompliſhment of thoſe is placed at a diſtance, when they interfere with preſent enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats loſe their terrors, and the promiſes are ſlighted by thoſe who look no farther than the inſtant moment; and this is the great ſource of that immorality and irreligion ſo prevalent in life, and which will never be corrected *till legiſlators make oaths leſs common, prevent their interfering with the ſwearer's own intereſt*, (as in the inſtance which gave occaſion to theſe reflections), *explain their nature before they are adminiſtered, and inflict inſtant puniſhment on their violation.*

My new maſter had but juſt returned on board, when the captain received orders to go and aſſiſt the operations of the war in another part of the world. The news raiſed every one's ſpirits. The ſight of a place in which moſt of them had been guilty of exceſſes which threw them into diſtreſs, and where all had been ſo wretchedly diſappointed, was neceſſarily diſagreeable; and conſequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from ſuch reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the ſame manner as the former, gave them pleaſure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ſhip, ſo very different from what I had ſeen in others, as to ſtrike me

with an agreeable ſurprize. But I was not long at a loſs for the reaſon. As ſoon as the ſhip was under ſail, the captain ſummoned all his officers into the great cabin, and after ſome general inſtructions about their duty, " Gentlemen," (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ſhip), " as we have never ſailed together before, I muſt " deſire your attention to a few hints, which I " always take the liberty to give in ſuch circum-" ſtances.

" We are now ſhut up together in a priſon, " where the unavoidable inconveniencies of our " ſituation make all our care neceſſary to prevent " its becoming inſupportable to us. For this rea-" ſon, the firſt thing I recommend to you is, *not* " *to game*. Beſide the danger of diſagreement " when the paſſions are agitated by the viciſſi-" tudes of play, our pay is ſcarce ſufficient for " our ſupport, ſo that the leaſt loſs muſt be diſ-" treſſing, the conſequence of which muſt be ge-" neral unhappineſs; for who can ſee his compa-" nion miſerable, without ſharing in his miſery?

" There is another thing, againſt which, though " not commonly conſidered in this light, I muſt " earneſtly caution you, as inevitably throwing a " gloom over that cheerfulneſs of mind which is " the greateſt happineſs of life, and to us muſt " ſupply the place of every other happineſs, and " this is *the vice of profane curſing and ſwearing*, " to the reproach of our ſervice too prevalent a-" mong us.

" There is no man, however hardened in this " deteſtable habit, but knows it to be a crime, " and feels a check from within every time he is " guilty of it, the repetition of which ſelf-accuſa-

" tion

" tion ſours his temper, and makes him diſſatisfied " with himſelf, and every perſon and thing about " him. For the truth of this, I appeal to unva- " ried experience. Who ever ſaw a man ſerenely " cheerful, that was addicted to this vice? (I " might ſay indeed to any vice; but, as our ſitu- " ation precludes us from the practice of moſt o- " thers, I mention theſe only into which we may " fall) for occaſional mirth is a very different " thing, and too often leads into conſequences " deſtructive of ſerenity of mind, eſpecially when " it is raiſed by means inconſiſtent with virtue.

" I do not ſpeak of the effect which the prac- " tice of virtue has upon our reſolution. The " courage of a *Briton* can never be doubted; but " ſtill there is as much difference between that of " a virtuous and a vicious man, as of the ſame " perſon when ſober or intoxicated with liquor. " The former is uniform, ſteady, and attentive " to improve every advantage, or remedy any miſ- " fortune; the other boiſterous, headlong, and " blinded with paſſion; for paſſion only can make " a man face death, who in the cool moments of " reflection is afraid to die. In a word, one is " the courage of a man, the other the raſhneſs of " a brute.

" Againſt theſe two things, therefore, *gaming* " and *ſwearing*, I take the liberty to caution you " as a friend who is ſincerely deſirous of your " welfare; but there is another vice, in reſpect " to which I do not think myſelf obliged to " obſerve the ſame delicacy, and this is *drunken-* " *neſs*, which is liable to be attended with ſuch " dangerous conſequences in our ſituation in par- " ticular, for I think it unneceſſary to mention " *any other*, that I ſhall ever exert all the autho-

" rity.

"rity entrusted to me to suppress it; and there-
"fore it is but just for me to declare, that no of-
"ficer, who is once guilty of it under my com-
"mand, shall ever do duty under me more.

"This, gentlemen, is what I had to say to
"you. The observation of these few hints will
"make us happy among ourselves, and respected
"by our men, without which it is impossible for
"us to be well obeyed by them; for heedless and
"profligate as they may appear, they are the se-
"verest critics on the conduct of their officers,
"and not only, like people in higher stations, re-
"vere the virtues which they have not resolution
"to imitate, but also actually do imitate them in
"a great degree."

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a person's prostituting his character to please his company, aggravated by the dangerous mistake of ridicule for applause CHRYSAL'*s master changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an interesting sermon; in which, among remarks more just than polite, he gives an uncommon reason for the particular deformity of vice in woman.*

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ship. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleasure: but, though all paid due respect to what he said, it was impossible to work such an instantaneous reformation, but that

some

some of them would now and then jest among themselves upon his conduct, as, from comparison with that of others of his rank, inconsistent with his character; and in other respects indulge in the levities of discourse and behaviour too general among persons not much accustomed to the rules of rational conversation.

But whatever allowances the circumstances of their education might claim for such sallies in the officers, the person who transgressed most was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who, to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically sanctified, ran into the opposite extreme.

The selfish vanity of man always takes pleasure in seeing any person debase himself, by acting beneath his character, especially if that character is such as appears to be placed in a more respectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ship, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleased with this prostitution, which he, by a common mistake of ridicule for applause, gave still farther into, *imagining they laughed with him*, when, in reality, *they laughed at him.*

But my master beheld the matter in another light; and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themselves in the ward room, "I have observed with much concern, Sir (said he), that you are falling into an "error, which I have known prove fatal to many "gentlemen of your profession. This is departing from your character, in order to accommodate yourself to what you think the humour of "your company. Believe me, Sir, no man ever "*did so*, who did not immediately fall into con-

"tempt

"tempt with the very people whofe approbation "he ftrove to purchafe at fo dear a rate. The "greateft libertine defpifes a clergyman who is a "libertine; and the reafon is plain,—you are fet "apart from the reft of mankind to perform the "rites of religion, and inculcate virtue by your "precepts and example; and for this you are "paid by the public, who expect that you fhould "earn your wages by doing your duty; and look "upon thofe who do not, as no better than cheats. "This may appear an odd way of fpeaking, but "it is true neverthelefs.

"On the other hand, where a clergyman ful-"fils his duty, and enforces his preaching by "his practice, though he may not abfolutely re-"form all thofe with whom he converfes, yet he "will certainly work this good effect, that he will "keep them in awe, and prevent their running "into outrageous lengths of wickednefs, at leaft "in his prefence. For whatever people may in-"confiderately imagine, no man ever acted in "character who was not refpected; no man ever "acted out of character who was not defpifed.

"Do but reflect a moment in what light you "yourfelf would look upon a lady who fhould "fpeak obfcenely, fwear, drink, and talk of fight-"ing, and it will fhow you the juftice of this re-"mark. For, what makes thefe vices fo particu-"larly hateful in a woman, is not any thing in "their nature particularly contradictory to the "fex more than ours, but becaufe they are con-"trary to her character.

"I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you in "this free manner in refpect to your conduct, "which I am fenfible concerns only yourfelf; "but as *the errors* you have fallen into appear to

"have arisen merely from inadvertency and mistake, I think it my duty to caution you against the danger of them, particularly in your present situation, with which I have had the opportunity of being much better acquainted than you possibly can be. I was in the service long, very long before you were born; and have been intimate with many chaplains, but never knew one who prostituted his character to humour his company, who was not neglected by them, when they had it in their power to have served him; as, on the contrary, I have known many instances of those who have reaped the happy fruits of a regular and virtuous conduct, by which they acquired an esteem that proved the foundation of their fortune; and if all have not been equally successful, their disappointment must be attributed to some other cause.

"I would not by this be understood to advise you to a morose distance and stiffness of behaviour, or asperity of reproof upon every occasion. They seldom, if ever, do good in any situation; in yours they will certainly do hurt, by piquing false pride to act in opposition to them, without regard to the consequences. An obliging temper, and uniformly decent conduct, lead insensibly to imitation, where contradiction or direct admonition would be held impertinent. These hints are so obvious, that they may seem unnecessary; but it is want of attention to them which has made so many chaplains miscarry in life, and indeed has brought the very character into disrepute."

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good *sense* nor virtuous inclination, was struck with the *justice* and force of this rebuke. He thanked my

master in the most ingenuous manner, and promised to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at first naturally exposed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my master took his part, and showed them the injustice of such behaviour, it soon wore off, and he had the heart-felt satisfaction to find himself treated with friendly respect and confidence by those whose gross familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *describes true compassion, and shows the general consequence of a man's acknowledging distress, with the reasons of it.* CHRYSAL'*s master is prevailed upon by the captain to tell him the cause of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generosity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new service.*

AS the captain maintained the most friendly intercourse with his officers, he soon observed that my master laboured under some heavy distress of mind. This naturally raised his compassion, and as real compassion never sees distress which it is not desirous of alleviating, he frequently took occasion, when they were by themselves, to turn his discourse upon such subjects as he thought might lead him to open himself; but finding that modesty, or a reserve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and observation that the knowledge of a man's being in distress always sinks him in the esteem of his com-

panions, by cutting off their hopes of ſervice from him, and alarming their apprehenſions of his expecting aſſiſtance from them, prevented his taking the hint, he reſolved to break through forms, and aſk him directly.

Seeing him therefore one day walking the quarter-deck in a mood of deep melancholy, he called him into the great cabin, and deſiring him to ſit down, after a little general chat, "I fear, Sir "(ſaid he), that ſomething hangs upon your ſpi- "rits. If it is proper to be communicated, let "me know what it is, and depend upon every "aſſiſtance in my power to make you eaſy. I aſk "not from idle or impertinent curioſity."

"Sir" (anſwered my maſter, ſtruck with the "manner in which he ſpoke), "I believe you "above the influence of ſuch motives, and ſhall "obey your kind commands without ſcruple. It "is too true that I am unhappy; and I fear my "unhappineſs is too common. I have devoted "my life to a profeſſion in which I have ſerved "my country above forty years with fidelity, and "I will take the liberty to ſay with ſome ſucceſs: "And now when my conſtitution is broken with "wounds, fatigue, and change of climates, when "nature calls for reſt and refreſhment, the only "reward I have to expect is poverty, and its in- "ſeparable attendant, contempt. This, Sir, is "the cauſe of my unhappineſs, and ſuch a cauſe "as I believe you will think it to be a juſt one."

"Very true, Sir (replied the captain), it is a "juſt one, and what muſt affect every man of "ſpirit, and a generous way of thinking. But "you ſhould not yield to it too far. You are "ſtill in the vigour of life, and, while the war "continues, ſhould look forward with hope.

"Though you have been unsuccessful hitherto, "fortune may prove more kind."

"Alas, Sir" (returned my master), "I have "been so long cheated by hope, that I now detest "it. When I came out upon this last expedi- "tion, our force made me so confident of suc- "cess, and I was so well acquainted with the "wealth in the place, that I unhappily gave way "to hope, and ran into expences, which, though "far from being unnecessary, were imprudent, "and threaten now to involve me in ruin on my "return home, as it has been thought proper by "our superiors to rate our service in the conquest "at so low a price."

"If that is the case then (said the captain), "do not return till matters mend. Whenever I "am ordered home, I'll take care to get you re- "moved into another ship. Your staying abroad "on such an account is not inconsistent with the "strictest honour, as you do it with an intention "truly honest."

"Dear Sir, (answered my master), that is very "true; but I am precluded even from the wretch- "ed relief of a voluntary exile. I have a wife "and children at home, the apprehension of "whose distresses drives me to despair. It was "to clothe and settle them in a little habitation, "where they might enjoy the indispensible ne- "cessaries of life with some degree of comfort, "that I anticipated my success, in the manner I "mentioned; and now, as that success has fallen "so far short of what I thought just expectation, "all the former savings of my life (savings from "the very necessities of nature) will be torn a- "way, by the rapacious hands of merciless cre- "ditors, to make up the deficiency in the articles

"bought of themselves to discharge their de-
"mands, and my wretched family thrown upon
"the unfriendly world, without its being in my
"power to assist them. I must therefore return,
"and go into a jail to prevent their starving in
"the streets. What affected myself only, honest
"indignation enabled me to support. I have seen
"boys, whose ignorance I despised, and men
"whose principles I detested, preferred to com-
"mand, while my services were overlooked; but
"as I had not the interest of the former, nor the
"*modish merit* of the latter, I bore my fate with
"patience: but to have those dearer to me than
"life exposed to misery, is more than I can bear."

"Nor shall you bear it! (replied the captain,
"who had feigned to cough, to hide the sympa-
"thetic tear that glistened in his eye); nor shall
"you bear it. How much is the debt that alarms
"you? I will advance it for you directly; and
"not that only, I will take upon me to make your
"merit (to which I am no stranger) known to
"your superiors, in such a light as shall not fail
"of just reward."

"O Sir! (returned my master, as soon as the
"fulness of his heart gave him utterance), how
"can I submit to obligations, to which it is im-
"possible I should ever make any return?"—

"All the return I desire, (answered the cap-
"tain) is your friendship. Speak! how much do
"you want? The packet is yet in sight. I will order
"a signal to be made for her, and give you a
"draught upon my agent."—

"Good Heaven! (exclaimed my master), Can
"there be such virtue in man?"—

"Come! what is the sum? (interrupted the
"captain, who wanted to shorten a conversation

"that

" that began to be too affecting to him), I ſhall " think you doubt my ſincerity, if you heſitate " to accept of my friendſhip."——

" Such a doubt (returned my maſter, whoſe " heart a guſh of tears had lightened) " would be " a blacker crime than ever ſtained my ſoul! " No! I receive your beneficence with humble " gratitude, as from the hand of Heaven, nor will " mention any other return, but what muſt be " made to that, till it ſhall be pleaſed to bleſs me " with better ability."

Then pulling out his pocket-book, " Here is the " account of what I owe, (continued he, giving " him ſome papers, and a purſe containing little " more than his ſhare of the price of the ſmug-" gler's boat); and here is all my worldly wealth, " which is no more than an aſſignment of my " miſerable prize-money, and theſe few pieces of " gold, thrown by fortune in my way, moſtly " ſince our hands were tied up by the capitula-" tion. For the balance I muſt be your debtor."

" For the balance! (anſwered the captain, re-" turning the purſe and the aſſignment), No! " you ſhall be my debtor (if you will call it ſo) " for the whole. It would be ſtrange friendſhip " to ſtrip you of every thing you may want your-" ſelf."—

" Excuſe me, Sir, (interrupted my maſter, un-" able to ſuppreſs the delicacy, the dignity of ho-" nour), I am not ſo low a wretch as to accept of " more than I indiſpenſibly want; and that for " perſons dearer to me than myſelf. If you will " not permit me to make the debt as light as I " can, it is impoſſible for me to receive your " friendſhip, however eſſential to the happineſs

" of

"of my heart. I am ſorry you ſhould have en-
"tertained ſo mean an opinion of me."—

"I have the higheſt opinion of you! (replied "the captain, who ſaw what pain he had given "him), I ſpoke in the warmth of my regard, "without the moſt diſtant deſign of giving you "offence. But you ſhall make your own terms; "on this condition though, that if you have any "occaſion for money, you will apply to me with "the freedom of a friend."

To ſuch a propoſal it was impoſſible to refuſe aſſenting. My maſter complied; and the captain taking the money, &c. from him, deſired that he would order a ſignal to be made for the packet, and write his letters, while he himſelf ſhould draw a bill upon his agent.—The ſentiments expreſſed by the captain made it a pleaſure to me to paſs into his ſervice on this occaſion.

As ſoon as the lieutenant went out, my new maſter walked a turn or two about his cabin, in the exalted happineſs of conſcious virtue; and then, drawing a bill for conſiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he deſired that he ſhould be called, and, when he entered, "I beg pardon "(ſaid he) for interrupting you; but it is to de-"ſire that you will preſent my compliments to "your wife, and tell her I beg ſhe will accept of "a trifling preſent from me, which I have taken "the liberty to include in the bill. Come! no "words! In this I will not be contradicted."

"O Sir! (anſwered the lieutenant, catching "his hand as he reached him the bill, and kiſſing "it eagerly), this is too much! My heart will "burſt."—Saying which, he went out of the cabin, in a ſilence more expreſſive of his ſoul than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP. XX.

History of a lieutenant of a man of war. A comparison between the rewards of merit, in the land, and sea-services; with a remarkable instance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The consequence of attempting to set up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himself remarkable.

WHEN every thing was settled, and the packet sail'd, the lieutenant desired leave to wait upon my master; and as soon as he entered, "I come, Sir, (said he) to pay you the thanks, "which the fulness of my heart would not let me "utter before. You have raised me to happiness "from the lowest state of despair."

"Hold, my friend!" (answered my master taking his hand, and squeezing it tenderly) "Speak "no more of it, I conjure you. I am abundantly "overpaid for what I have done, by the pleasure of "having served a man of merit; and shall think "you repine at my happiness in being able to purchase that pleasure, if I ever hear the affair mentioned more."

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he saw oppressed with gratitude, he then changed the conversation to another subject, when the lieutenant shewed so much good sense, and solid judgment, that my master could not forbear expressing his astonishment, that such a man should have been so long unpromoted in the service.

"If you can have patience to hear the story of "my life (answered the lieutenant) it will soon "explain that difficulty to you. My father was

"wa-

" an officer in the army, who was rewarded for " the loſs of a leg, and thirty years ſervice, with " the half-pay of a captain of foot. As he had a " wife and children to maintain and provide for, " he retired to a cheap county, where he lived in " the moſt rigid œconomy in hopes of ſaving, for " he could not make any thing, being precluded " from every kind of induſtry, by the profeſſion " to which he had devoted his youth.

" The firſt acquaintance a ſtranger gets in a " country place, is the parſon of the pariſh. It " was my father's happineſs to fix his habitation, " where there was a clergyman who would have " been a valuable acquaintance in any place, and " who was equally happy, in the acquiſition of a " rational acquaintance in him. The common in- " tercourſe of neighbourhood was therefore ſoon " improved between them into the ſtrongeſt friend- " ſhip, in the intimacy of which, as my father " would often naturally mention his anxiety for " his children, his friend perſuaded him to breed " me, the eldeſt, to the ſea-ſervice, in which he " thought he himſelf might be able to ſerve me, " by his intereſt with ſeveral commanders, with " whom he had been acquainted formerly, when " chaplain to a man of war. That is the ſervice!" (would the good man ſay, with pleaſure ſparkling in his eyes, " That is the ſervice in which merit " is never diſregarded. You would not have been " laid aſide after thirty years, to pine upon five " ſhillings a day, if you had been bred to the ſea. " No, no! merit is all that is neceſſary there.

" Such an argument was too flattering to my " father's hopes to be reſiſted. Though he felt " the evil of not having been bred to buſineſs him- " *ſelf, he* was charmed at the thought of his ſon's

" being

" being placed in the way of riſing to an higher
" ſphere, and readily aſſented to the advice of his
" friend, who, not content with mere advice, in-
" ſiſted on taking me home with him, and giving
" me ſuch an education as ſhould qualify me to
" make a figure in the profeſſion to which he had
" directed me. " If ever a man of merit in the
" ſea-ſervice (would he often ſay) fails of riſing, it
" is for want of having had a good education to
" found his hopes upon. A mere ſeaman may
" work a ſhip, but an admiral ſhould be a ſcho-
" lar."

" How well this reaſoning was founded, ex-
" perience daily ſhews; though it would be in-
" gratitude in me to arraign it, as the little taſte
" for letters, which I acquired from his care, if it
" has not contributed to my advancement, has at
" leaſt enabled me to ſupport the ſhock of diſap-
" pointment, as well as to avoid many evils, into
" which I have ſeen others, who had not the ſame
" advantage, fall.

" At ſixteen, (for he inſiſted that it was moſt
" wretched policy to turn a boy looſe upon the
" world before he had come to the uſe of reaſon, and
" was well inſtructed in the principles of morality
" and religion, for the ſake of gaining a couple
" of years advance:) At ſixteen, I ſay, I was ſent
" to ſea, provided with a cheſt of books, and
" mathematical inſtruments, and a good ſuit of
" clothes, not to diſcredit the recommendation
" which my beſt friend gave me to an admiral,
" with whom he had been moſt intimate, when a
" lieutenant; and whoſe readineſs to ſerve him in
" any thing, he would not admit a doubt of.

" On my preſenting my letter, the admiral at
" firſt had forgot the name, but recollecting him-
" ſelf

" ſelf at length, on my mentioning ſome circum-
" ſtances which I had often heard my friend dwell
" upon with pleaſure, " Very true," (ſaid he) " I
" remember him now. He made the beſt bowl of
" punch of any man in the navy."

" This was all the notice the *great man* took of
" him, or of me on his account, except I ſhould
" add, that on his captain's obſerving I ſhould
" make a good figure on the quarter deck, I was
" directly rated a midſhipman; a favour for which
" I ſoon found I was indebted to his caution of
" ſending me well dreſſed, much more than to his
" intereſt.

" Though I felt this diſappointment of my firſt
" hopes very ſeverely, on my friend's account, as
" well as my own, I could not think of ſhocking
" him with the news, but, ſaying in general terms
" that I had been well received, reſolved to apply
" myſelf to my buſineſs, and try whether I could
" not deſerve that favour which he had failed to
" procure me.

" As I had been accuſtomed to converſation
" very different from that of thoſe, with whom
" alone I could now converſe, I took every oppor-
" tunity, when off duty, of running to my books.
" But the relief I found from this was for the
" preſent over-balanced by the general ridicule,
" into which it drew me; eſpecially as I not only
" avoided obſcenity, ſwearing, and drinking myſelf,
" but had alſo been ſo imprudent as to rebuke o-
" thers for them. I was immediately nick-named
" *the parſon*, and avoided by every one in the ſhip.

" I need not deſcribe to you the ſituation of a
" *petit* officer, inſulted by thoſe below him, ridi-
" culed by his equals, and looked down upon with
" contempt by his ſuperiors, who forgot they ever

" were

" were in his ſtation themſelves. I bore it for " fifteen years, at the end of which time, having " the good fortune to be ſent to London with a " preſs-gang, on purpoſe to mortify me, for I al- " ways diſliked that particular duty, more than " any other in the ſervice, on ſeeing an advertiſe- " ment in the news-papers, that all who were " qualified, by their ſtanding, to be lieutenants in " the navy, ſhould attend to paſs their examina- " tion, I offered myſelf without any other intro- " duction, or intereſt, and was appointed to a " ſhip."

" In this ſtation I have done my duty for five " and twenty years, without reprehenſion; but as " I have no *corporation intereſt* to puſh me at home, " none of the *modern polite accompliſhments*, to re- " commend me to the favourites of fortune, whom " I occaſionally meet in the ſervice, nor have ever " had the good luck to find an opportunity of " making myſelf remarkable, by any action of " *eclat*, though in itſelf no more than a ſucceſsful " blunder, my uniform conduct and care have " paſſed unnoticed, and I remain a lieutenant " ſtill."

The circumſtances of this ſtory affected my maſter in the ſtrongeſt manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and, deſiring him not to deſpair, repeated his promiſe of uſing all his intereſt to ſerve him, of the ſucceſs of which he had no reaſon to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One inſtance though of my maſter's conduct in his military capacity, I cannot forbear mentioning, as it ſhews his character in the ſtrongeſt light, which was, that he never interfered in the buſineſs of his officers, but if he happened to ſee any-

thing which he disproved, instead of interposing his own authority publicly, and giving contrary orders, he always spoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his direction under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he spared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and consequently lessened in their opinion.

This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but also contributed greatly to advance the service. For as every officer knew that he should have the credit, or bear the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themselves with the utmost ardour; whereas, on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careless of course, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himself the merit of success; if they do not even take a malignant pleasure in any miscarriage, the blame of which they have so just an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of speaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL's master meets his brother. Some account of him. He represents certain matters in an odd light. CHRYSAL enters into his service. Conclusion of his character. CHRYSAL quits his service on an uncommon occasion, for one, from which he passes in the usual course of business into that of the general.

WHEN we arrived at the place of our destination, we found the shore covered with an

extenſive incampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the moſt active war.

The firſt thing my maſter did, was of courſe to wait upon the general, whoſe operations he was ſent to aſſiſt. He met him viewing an occaſional fortification, which he had cauſed to be raiſed, to train his army to the method of making regular ſieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground, to be ſowed with vegetables, to correct the bad effects of the ſalt proviſions which his men had lived upon in their paſſage thither, and preſerve them in health.

The account he received from my maſter of the heavy loſs ſuſtained in the expedition from which he had juſt come, gave him viſible pleaſure, as it ſeemed to ſet his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverſe of that obſerved there, in the moſt advantageous light.

"I wonder" (ſaid he, looking around him with an air of conſcious exultation) "how officers can "reconcile it to themſelves, to throw away the "the lives of their men, in ſuch a manner! For "my part, I act upon very different principles. I "take care not only to give my troops an inſight "into all the various branches of the military art, "but alſo to keep them in ſuch health as may "enable them to reap the advantage of their ex- "perience. There is nothing ſo bad in war as "participation. It was the cauſe of the late ge- "neral's defeat and death."

"Yes!" (interrupted an officer who ſtood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience) "Delay is full as bad. Your troops want "neither health nor experience to conquer every "oppoſition they can poſſibly meet; and will ac- "compliſh the end they were ſent upon, before

"your cabbages are fit for them to eat, if you "will but lead them against their enemies, and "not give them time to retire with their effects "into places, whither it is impossible for an army "to pursue them, while your men waste time and "spirits in the foolish parade of mock battles "and sieges, till they lose their ardour by delays "which can answer no end, but that of protract-"ing the war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative "command."

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and struck the general with equal surprize and indignation, as it touched him in the tenderest part: however, dissembling his passion, of which he had an absolute command, "I would have you to know, Sir," (said he) "that I think it the highest assurance in "you to attempt censuring my conduct, who are "sent merely to execute my orders. When I ask "your opinion, it will be time enough for you to "give it; till then, obedience, not advice, is what "I expect from you. If I did not hold it beneath "me to shew resentment to one so absolutely sub-"ject to my power, you should instantly find the "effect of this insolence. But presume not on "that protection any farther, as you regard your "safety. No man provokes me with impunity."

"N—n—nor me!" (sputtered the officer, whose temper, hot as that of the general was cool, caught fire at the faintest shadow of offence, and flamed almost to madness, as soon as rage permitted him to articulate a word) "Nor m—m—me. I seek "no p—p—protection but my sword, with which "I will v—v—vindicate my own honour, and "make good what I say.——Talk to m—m—me "of safety and im—p—unity!"

The

The affair now became ſerious, theſe words ſtriking at the general's ſafety as well as his honour, and convincing him that he muſt ſupport his dignity by a vigorous effort. "What!" (retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority) "Do you menace me too? I "ſuppoſe you deſign to raiſe a mutiny in the ar-"my, but I'll prevent that."——Then turning to an officer who attended, "Take that madman "away," (continued he) "and put him under a "guard till he recovers his reaſon. Such beha-"viour muſt not go unpuniſhed."—Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away ſpeechleſs and convulſed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner; an honour, however, which my maſter declined accepting that day, as he was moſt impatient to ſee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the general.

The meeting of theſe brothers was truly affecting. The inſtinctive connection of nature had been indiſſolubly cemented between them by the ſacred bond of friendſhip, founded on a ſenſe of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the ſame principles, they had both devoted themſelves to the profeſſion of arms, in the different ſervices of the land and ſea, as if to avoid the jealouſy of rivalſhip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour.

Undebauched by affluence, and diſdaining to waſte his youth at home in luxury, when the cauſe of his country called for his aſſiſtance, the elder bravely came to ſeek for glory in theſe inhoſpitable wilds, with as much ardour as my maſter

pursued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours which he might transmit to his own posterity, equal to those which his brother inherited from his illustrious ancestors.

When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally answered, my master gratified the curiosity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought success, closing the black detail with some remarks on the different conduct of the general of this army, which were much to his advantage.

" Your reflections, my dearest brother," (answered the officer) " are most just, as things ap-" pear to you. But when you have had an op-" portunity of seeing farther, I fear you will find " reason to change your sentiments, and that the " *delay* here proceeds at bottom from the same " principle with the *precipitation* which produced " such terrible effects with you, and Heaven " grant it produce not as bad. Interest is the ob-" ject every where; and *whether that is pursued* " *by sacrificing the forces in rash and ill-conducted* " *attempts, to gain an immediate* PRIZE, *or by let-* " *ting them melt away in inaction, to accumulate the* " PROFITS *of command,* makes no difference in " the end.

" I would not be understood from this to justi-" fy the officer for arraigning the general's con-" duct in so public and personal a manner. Such " ungoverned warmth is inexcusable. Proper re-" spect must be paid to those who bear authority, " or the effect of that authority ceases; indeed " it is not to them, but to him who delegates the " authority the respect is paid. A general at the " head of an army represents his sovereign in the " plenitude of his power; and, to suffer any slight

" to

"to be ſhewn to his delegated character, were "to betray the truſt of that delegation.

"For this reaſon I think his puniſhment was "neceſſary, and *therefore* juſt; I wiſh I could add "that it was equally ſo from the injuſtice as from "the circumſtances of the accuſation which occa-"ſioned it; but to any one who will not ſhut his "eyes, it muſt appear beyond a doubt, that his "great crime was ſpeaking too much, and too "plain truth; for with all our boaſted care for "the preſervation of the men, their diſtreſſes are "ſuch as have not left me a penny in my pocket, "for I cannot ſhut my hand where my heart is "opened. In ſhort, I am ſo ſick of the whole "ſcene, that I have ſolicited the command of a "detached party, with which I hope to ſhew that "the native bravery of *Britons*, when led with "ſpirit, requires but little experience to enable "them to conquer more formidable foes than "naked ſavages, led by a few wretched *French-*"*men*, in a condition not much better. I ſet "out to-morrow morning, and think it a parti-"cular happineſs that you have arrived time e-"nough for me to have this interview with you."

The reſt of their converſation is not neceſſary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeſtic concerns. This much only it is but juſt for me to obſerve, that it ſhewed their conduct in the intercourſe and relations of private life to be as amiable as that in their public capacities were exalted, and proved that moral virtue is the beſt foundation for true heroiſm.——My maſter's brother having, in the courſe of their converſation, intimated his having ſome preſent occaſion for money, I here entered into his ſervice.

You

You may judge that I remained not long in the possession of my new master. His brother had no sooner left me, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant for some additions, which he thought it necessary to make at his own expence to the provisions made by the public for the support and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country.

The sentiments expressed by my master, in the effusion of his soul to his brother, shewed his character in the justest light; I shall therefore only add, that as he acted from principles firmly established on the invariable basis of reason, there was no danger of his deviating from the paths in which he set out.

So bright a prospect made it a pain to me to quit his service so suddenly; but I have since met many mortifications of the same kind, my stay being always shortest in the best hands.

My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next master the merchant, who, in the common course of soliciting permission for a ship of his to sail with a cargo that must be ruined by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the shipping in the place, in the unfathomable wisdom of the ruling powers to promote some unintelligible plan of service, gave me to the general's clerk, from whom, in the same course of business, I came into the service of the general.

BOOK

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's *master makes some characteristic reflections. He is surprized at the officer's refusing to make up matters, and gives a particular reason for some people's rising in the world. An extraordinary personage enters to him. Description of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS, *and offers some interesting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with, and on the practice of forming in the closet plans of operation for armies in the field. Odd reason why the* AMERICANS *are desirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

WHEN I entered into the possession of my new master, he was waiting in his tent with the most anxious impatience for the return of a person whom he had employed to mediate, as of himself, between him and the officer whose presumption in daring to find fault with his measures he had thought proper to punish in the manner I just now mentioned.

His reflections on an affair that struck so dangerously at his pride and avarice, the ruling passions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the sight of the money gave them a more pleasing

pleasing turn. Having asked the clerk a few questions in the way of business, and dismissed him, he took the purse, and weighing it in his hand, "Aye!" (said he, with delight glistening in his eyes) "this will do. This embargo, was "a lucky thought. Let who will complain of "the hinderance it is to the business of the pub- "lic, it advances mine, and that is all I care for. "I came here to serve myself, and not the pub- "lic; and as there is neither plunder nor contri- "butions to be got by activity, I must try what "I can do another way. I shewed my dexterity "at hunting savages in the mountains of my own "country, and have no desire to renew the chase "here. It was necessary for me then to do some- "thing that should make me remarkable, and "gain favour with those who I saw must prevail "in the end, and therefore I spared no trouble "nor fatigue, neither friend nor foe, to convince "them of my attachment; and in reward they "have now given me this command, in conduct- "ing which I must use delay to reap the advan- "tages of my former activity. *Fabius* saved "*Rome* by delay; let me but make my fortune "by it, and I envy him not his fame. I prefer "this sound," (chinking the purse) "to the "empty noise of public acclamation, the shouts "of a giddy mob, who bless and curse with the "same breath, and without knowing why they "do either. No, no, no! this is the music that "charms my ear."

His meditations were broken off here, by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation, nor even accept of his liberty till he should

be

be acquitted by a court-martial, and have juftice done him for the affront offered to his honour.

Such an account was far from being agreeable to my mafter, who, for obvious reafons, wifhed to have every thing go on as quietly as poffible. After fome paufe, "This is a damn'd affair (faid he); "but we muft now e'en make the beft we can of it. "Who could have thought that a countryman of "of my own would have proved fo refractory? "We have always been remarkable for hanging "well together. *One and all* was the word, or "we could never have done fuch great matters. "If it is once found out that we can be divided, "we fhall foon lofe our confequence, and every "man be reduced to *the poor profpect of depending on his own merit*. However, fince he "will not accept of his liberty here, he fhall "e'en go home a prifoner, and recover it there "as well as he can. I am of the right fide, and "don't fear but my friends will bring me through "more than this; efpecially as it is a national "concern to us all alike. In the mean time, we "muft double our diligence to make hay while "the fun fhines."

The gentleman, who was in all his fecrets, acknowledged the force of his reafoning; and was going to communicate to him fome new ftrokes of management, when word was brought to my mafter, that a perfon to whom he could not properly be denied defired to fee him.

There was fomething in the whole appearance of this perfon that ftruck me with the ftrongeft curiofity the moment I faw him. His ftature, above the common fize of man, was formed with the jufteft proportion, and denoted ability to execute the moft difficult attempts, which the deter-

mined and enterprizing ſpirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reaſon attempered reſolution, ſhowed the genuine workings of his ſoul; and his whole deportment was in the unaffected eaſe of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of ſtudied rules of behaviour, deviſed only to deceive.

As ſoon as he entered, "I am come, Sir (ſaid "he, throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, and "cutting ſhort all that parade of ceremony, on "the punctilious obſervation of which my maſter "prided himſelf not a little), to receive your or-"ders. It is time I ſhould join my people, who "grow impatient, as the enemy have begun to "ſtir; and I never chooſe to balk their firſt ar-"dour. There is nothing like taking men in "the humour to fight, and before they have time "to conſider too much about it."

"I deſign, Sir (anſwered my maſter, with a "ſolemnity and affectation of politeneſs, which "made the ſtrongeſt contraſt to the blunt free-"dom of the other), to call a council of war very "ſoon, at which I ſhall be glad of your aſſiſtance, "to form a plan of operations for the campaign. "When that is done, and all proper meaſures "concerted, you ſhall ſet out. *Precipitation* is "very dangerous, and directly contrary to the "principles of the *regular art of war*, by which "I mean to proceed. The ſavages ſhall find "ſome difference between my conduct and that "of my predeceſſors. They ſhan't ſurprize me "on my march, nor draw me into an ambuſh "among woods and mountains."

"As to the art of war, Sir, (replied the other), "I know no more of it than what Heaven and

"common

"common ſenſe have taught me, which is to "find out the enemy, and beat them as ſoon as I "can, my plan for which is always directed by "preſent circumſtances; nor do I know how "one can be formed to effect any other way."

"Your exploits have always been well execut-"ed (returned my maſter, with an air and tone "of importance, as deſigning to ſay ſomething "that ſhould raiſe him in the opinion of the "other); but you have hitherto acted rather in "the low ſphere of a *partiſan*, than as a general. "The duty of a general comprehends much "more than what you mention, as you ſhall "have an opportunity of learning before we take "the field. I intend to go through a regular "courſe of military operations, to inſtruct my of-"ficers and diſcipline the men. Your *Heaven-"taught* generals may beat the enemy; but that "is the leaſt part of the care and duty of a ge-"neral now-a-days; the very leaſt part."—

"And pray, Sir, how much time will this "courſe of operations take up?"—

"I cannot exactly ſay; but not above a month "or two, I imagine."—

"A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we ſhall "have done the moſt troubleſome part of our "work by that time, or elſe I do not know what "may be the conſequence. For, to be plain "with you, theſe delays will never do with the "*uncivilized Americans*, who judge of things on-"ly by common ſenſe, and cannot be made to "comprehend this way of carrying on a war, by "lying ſtill in a camp, and doing nothing. They "have formed very diſadvantageous notions of "the delays already made, and think a man who "does not advance to fight his enemy, is afraid

"of him; and therefore, if they are not led to "action directly, they will desert; so that if I "stay a month or two here at school, to learn a "lesson I may never have occasion for, I must "find other forces to put it in practice with."

"Cannot you devise any reason that may account for your staying, to their satisfaction?

"Really, Sir, not I. I never was good at de-"vising reasons destitute of truth, in my life; and "have entirely forgot the practice, since I have "conversed with the *Americans*, who are far "from being such fools as they are too generally "thought to be. Though they have not the ad-"vantages of learning, they see, by the light of "natural reason, through all the boasted wiles of "policy; and, as they never mean deceit them-"selves, detest it in others, however speciously "disguised, nor ever place confidence a second "time where it has been once abused."

"How! the *Americans* never mean deceit! sure-"ly you must know better: They are the most "perfidious deceitful savages that burthen the "earth; and it would be an advantage to the "world, if the whole race of them were exter-"minated."

"Such of them as converse much with *civilized* "*Europeans*, it is too true, learn many things "from them which are a disgrace to their own "*savage* nature, as you call it. But I speak of "the general disposition of the people. Treat "them with candour, probity, and tenderness, "and they will return them tenfold in all their "intercourse with you; as, on the other hand, "they seldom fail to retort the contrary treat-"ment with severe usury. Nor are they to be "blamed. In all their dealings with the *Euro-*

"*peans*, they find themselves imposed upon in
" the grossest manner, in a manner not fit to be
" practised even with brutes. Their sensibility
" is quick, and their passions ungoverned; per-
" haps ungovernable. How then can it be won-
" dered at that they make returns in kind, when-
" ever they find any opportunity, and become
" the most dangerous enemies? Whereas, if
" those passions were attached by good treat-
" ment, they would be the most affectionate,
" steady and careful friends. I speak from ex-
" perience. I treat them as rational creatures;
" and they behave as such to me. I never de-
" ceive them, and they never deceive me. I do
" them all the good offices in my power, and
" they return them manifold. In short, I prac-
" tise to them the behaviour which I wish to
" meet from them, and am never disappointed.
" All the evils which have been suffered from
" them, have proceeded from the unhappy error,
" of thinking ourselves possessed of a superiority
" over them, which nature, that is, Heaven, has
" not given us. They are our fellow-creatures,
" and in general above our level in the virtues
" which give real preeminence, however despi-
" cably we think of, and injuriously we treat
" them."

" They are much obliged to your character of
" them at least, whatever others may be. And
" pray, Sir, what is it you would have me to do,
" to preserve the good opinion of these most *vir-*
" *tuous people?*"

" I presume not, Sir, to say what is proper for
" you to do. All I desire is that you will dis-
" miss me directly, in a capacity of making good
" my promises to my friends; and by the time

"you say you shall be ready to move with the "army, I hope to give a good account of the "enemy."

"That, Sir, I have no thought of. However, "as you are so desirous of going, I shall not de- "lay you. I'll form a plan of operations for you "this very day."

"For me, Sir? I do not understand you. "How can you know what will be proper or pos- "sible for me to do at the distance of many hun- "dred miles, in a country you are an utter "stranger to? In *Europe*, where war, like a "game of chess, is *played*, as I may say, entirely "by art, that method of planning in the closet "the operations of the field may do perhaps; but "then it is necessary that each side should play "the game by the same rules. A body of *Ame- "ricans*, who know nothing of the art of war but "fighting, might be apt to move so irregularly, "as to disconcert the whole scheme of the *game*. "Indeed, by what I can judge of the matter, "that very method of planning the operations of "a campain is advantageous only to the general, "as it prolongs the war, and consequently the "emoluments of command, by tying up his hand "from availing himself of any unforeseen cir- "cumstances in his favour. Whereas, if armies "were sent out only to fight, as formerly, before "the *improvements* in the art of war, the dispute "would soon be decided, and even the vanquish- "ed better off than the victors are at present, "whose riches and strength are so exhausted by "this dilatory way of proceeding, that they are "not the better for their success. I hope, Sir, "you do not take offence at the plainness of my "speech. I have so long been accustomed to

"converse

"converse with *savages*, who speak just what "they think, that I am become quite a stranger "to that *dissimulation* which is called *politeness* "among *civilized* nations, and must make use of "words in their original intention of conveying "my thoughts."

"Not in the least, Sir. I like your free man-"ner much. It is in the character of a soldier. "I will order every thing to be got ready for you "directly, and you shall go as soon as you please; "at full liberty to act as you see proper."

"I hope, Sir, I shall not make a bad use of "that liberty. And pray, among the other "things, do not forget to order me some money."

"Money, Sir! what occasion can you possibly "have for money among *savages*, who do not "know the value of it?"

"Why really, Sir, that question is natural. "But the matter is, the *savages* who come among "the *Europeans* see every thing governed by gold, "in such a manner that they have taken it into "their heads we worship it; and therefore are "become as eager for it as ourselves, in hopes of "gaining an ascendency over us, when they have "got our god in their possession."

A conscious heart takes to itself more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was said, touched my master to the quick, and made him not desire to pursue the conversation any farther with such a free speaker, nor have so nice an observer longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him therefore the money he required, he wished him success with a forced politeness, and dismissed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleasure to me to change my service on this occasion, as the idea I had conceived of my new master, both from his appearance and conversation, promised me some variety, and my curiosity was heartily surfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL'*s master was received by his subjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in some important matters, with the consequences.*

AS soon as every thing was ready, my master set out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may suppose, through uninhabited desarts.

The reception he met with from his people, was the very reverse of what *sovereigns* usually meet. They welcomed him with sincere joy and respect, which they expressed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I say "Sovereigns," as he really enjoyed that power in its most rational sense, his will being a law to all around him, because they always found it just and advantageous to them.

Though the account which he gave my late master of his manner of treating his people, shewed a just foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the first rulers of the earth, was founded also on the relations of nature, and

supported by its strongest ties, he being literally the father of his subjects, the king of his own family.

To explain this, it is necessary to inform you, that, on his fixing his residence among these *uncivilized* nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aside all such rules of conduct as seemed to him to be contradictory to natural reason and the public good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience.

Among these, the chief was the custom of restraining the commerce between the sexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the desire which first brought them together had ceased; as he saw that the strongest passion which governs the human heart is that desire, (for his philosophy was not refined enough to suggest one thought of governing the passions), and as the continuation of the species depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every opposition to it to be most criminal in itself, and detrimental to the public good, (properly the first object of every civil institution, and which can be promoted no way so effectually, as by promoting population), and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under such restrictions only, as were evidently necessary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the species. He gave liberty to every man to converse with as many females as he pleased, and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the use of it would defeat the design; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cause confusion, and prevent both pa-

ternal

ternal care, and filial duty, by the uncertainty of defcent: But the latter inftance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to choofe whom they liked, and, if not pregnant, quit them at pleafure for others, without reproach or fhame, the offspring of all which connections were to remain with the fathers.

I fhall not fay whether reafon originally fuggefted this fyftem to him; or, (as is often the cafe), whether he fought for reafons to fupport the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the fame. His fubjects increafed in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the jufteft of all principles, voluntary confent, over a people infeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the ftrongeft ties of nature, as being, by this complicated commerce, in the ftricteft fenfe, one family: for, difdaining to make laws for others which he would not obferve himfelf, (like too many of his brother legiflators), he had enforced his precepts fo powerfully by his example, that there was fcarce an houfe in any of the tribes around him, from which he had not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number.

That his reception, as I have obferved, fhould be moft cordial from fuch fubjects, is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailing him with one voice by every tender relation of nature, brother, father, fon, hufband, fhewed an affection too fublime to be expreffed by formal rules, and impoffible to be feen without fympathizing in it.

When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and diftri-

buting

buting among them the presents which he had received for that purpose, gave them an account of the mighty army sent by his Sovereign against the enemy, and proposed to them to assist its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence in one who had never deceived them. They readily and sincerely assented to his proposal; and sending to invite all their neighbours to join them, separated to make the very little preparations necessary for persons who were strangers to luxury, and knew no wants but those of nature.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on* FINERY. *Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL*'s master kept peace in his family.*

AS soon as my master had thus concluded the business of his public character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domestic concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence by the side of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females of his present family; for instead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he

not only always dismissed them with presents in the most friendly manner, but also kept up an intercourse of regard with them and their successive husbands, every one of whom he attached to himself in the strongest manner, being particularly ready, on all occasions, to do them every good office in his power.

In these cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed, from his care, all the necessaries of life with more convenience and comfort, than they could possibly have experienced among their own people, unimbittered by any of those jealousies and feuds which such a situation might seem to threaten, so equally did he dispense his favours among them.

When he had given some orders in his house, he walked out to visit his family, and enjoy the sublimest instance of the happiness of power, in making all who were subject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderness with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their caresses, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of these females was most different from the delicate sensibility that softened the beauties of *Amelia* *, or the fire which animated the charms of *Olivia*; but custom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, especially as no comparison could there be made to their disadvantage; and the honest readiness with which they met his addresses, the warmth with which they shared his joy, amply overbalanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion, any ignorance of those affected arts of coyness, which, overacted, often pall the taste for long expected pleasure.

* See *Vol.* I.—Chap. iv.

As his women did not expect his visit so soon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domestic œconomy, or in such amusements as custom had made pleasing to them. The occupations of the former kind were necessarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumstance of their lives; but in the latter, fancy, sole sovereign of the scene, asserted her unbounded rule, and sported in variety of forms, many of which I soon had an opportunity of seeing.

As my master proceeded in his patriarchial progress, he met a considerable number of the females of his family, with such of the neighbouring men, as, from age or idleness, were unfit for more useful employments, assembled together under a spreading tree that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dressed out in their gayest apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diversions. At the sight of him they all arose, and would have desisted, but he prevented them, and not only made them resume their sports, but also sat down himself, in the midst of the company, to be a spectator of them.

It seems it was a custom among them to meet frequently thus at each others cottages, for the pleasure of enjoying their favourite amusements to more advantage together, and displaying their *finery*, to set off which, no art nor care was neglected on these occasions. They dressed themselves in their best blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours, to make them look more gaudy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glass beads were rolled around their arms and legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and

brass, and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues.

I see your laughter moved at this description; but that proceeds from narrow prejudice, and want of rational reflection, on which it would appear that all useless ornaments are equally just objects of ridicule, whether made of silks and laces, or partycoloured rags; whether bits of glass, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I say, but for a moment, and you will see, that, in reality, there is nothing more absurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another; *rings of brass*, for instance, *on the toes*, than *golden on the fingers;* in *carving the skin*, than *boring the ears;* or *in painting the face blue and green*, than *white* and *red*. The same vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the same effect and admiration; as, in things equally unsupported by reason, custom and caprice bear equal sway. The difference in the means therefore makes none in the end; at least none to the disadvantage of the persons of whom I speak, as it certainly is more absurd to lavish treasures, that might be so much better employed, to a worthless purpose, which cheaper bawbles would answer as well.

The amusements in which they were engaged, were as whimsical as their dresses. Some skipped about, describing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and weariness obliged them to sit down. Others, and these the greatest number, were employed in chucking shells or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the sand, for prizes of bits of tin or brass; which game they applied themselves to with the greatest eagerness and anxiety, and many were so expert at, as to

ſtrip their antagoniſts of all their hoards, often, indeed, not without the aſſiſtance of chicanery and deceit. And a few of the eldeſt, and thoſe who had nothing to ſtake at play, gathered up and down into little ſets, and entertained themſelves making remarks upon the reſt, not always dictated by good-nature or truth; while the miſtreſs of the cottage buſied herſelf in adjuſting ceremonials, ſettling her company at their ſeveral amuſements, and ſerving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office ſhe never repined at, as her conſequence was eſtabliſhed by the number of her gueſts.

Though mere amuſement was the obvious end of theſe meetings, other objects were generally purſued, and other conſequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often completed; and trifling as the prizes were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paſſions, and ſet the competitors together by the ears, till they almoſt clawed out each others eyes.

Their ſports were at length beginning to take their uſual turn. The tempers of the loſers became ſoured; and the detection of ſome *deep* ſtrokes of play gave riſe to altercations, which would ſoon have been followed by blows; but my maſter interpoſed his authority, and put an end to their diſputes, when the party broke up; ſome retiring to keep the aſſignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reſt to calculate their winnings, or deviſe ſchemes for retrieving their loſſes at their next meeting; and my maſter having ſingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reſt taking offence, or

even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to supply their loss elsewhere.

I have observed your astonishment at this whole scene, especially at my master's hardiness in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage; but what will it be, when I tell you, that that number often amounted to hundreds, and that he never had recourse to any kind of severity in his conduct to them?

To comprehend this, it is necessary for you to consider, that most of, if not all the uneasinesses which imbitter the life of man, arise from an officious intrusion to the uneasinesses of others, or an overweening partiality to himself, that makes him expect treatment which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant, for matters not worth his being offended at; an observation that will hold in every state public and private; among *governors*, as well as the *governed*.

His rule then was never to take part in their disputes among themselves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himself set them the example. This disarmed them of that *perverseness which is the sex's most offensive weapon.* They remained constant to him, because they were not restrained from being otherwise whenever they pleased; nor did they trouble him with their disputes, because they saw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL'*s master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his countrywomen, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of* CHRYSAL'*s master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

THE very next morning his people assembled before his door, in readiness to obey his commands, when he led them directly in quest of the enemy, sharing himself in all their fatigues, and teaching them to despise danger by his example, so little did he know the duty of a general.

It would be tiresome to enter into a particular description of an expedition, carried on among wildernesses and desarts, and consisting chiefly of ambuscades and surprizes. It is sufficient to say, that he was successful in all his enterprizes, reason and presence of mind serving him, instead of experience, in the regular art of war; and courage well supplying the place of discipline in his men.

Such services could not miss of reward from a just and judicious sovereign. His power was enlarged, and he received those marks of favour and distinction which were originally instituted to excite virtuous emulation, and set the seal of honour on successful merit; though, like most other human institutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only disgrace from

being bestowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general should think proper to let it move, some of his people brought before him an *European* lady, whom they found wandering in those unfrequented wilds, her guide having mistaken his way.

Such a situation necessarily entitled her to his compassion and assistance; but he soon felt himself still farther interested in her favour, when he found she was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this distant part of the world.

There is not a stronger instance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger sense *patriotism*, than the instinctive affection which persons of the same country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a strange place. My master instantly called her his dear countrywoman, and embracing her with the tenderness of a brother, led her away to his own tent, which he resigned to her as the best accommodation he could give her, and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged to her, which his men looking upon as fair prize had taken and divided among themselves, to be restored, promising to recompense the captors himself.

As soon as she had adjusted her appearance in some better manner, she sent to desire my master's company, for he had told her that he should not come without permission, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expressing wonder what could have brought her thus in the midst of those desarts, so far away from every *European* settlement,

settlement, she gratified his curiosity with the following account, which was often interrupted by sighs, tears, and every expression of the most poignant grief.

Her husband, (she said) who had been an officer of distinguished rank in the *English* forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they suffered in the beginning of the war, before *England* had exerted herself in such a manner as to entitle her to success; the news of whose death affected her so extraordinarily, that she resolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of so long a voyage by sea, and journey through uninhabited desarts in time of war, for the melancholy pleasure of one last view of his dear remains, which she had accordingly obtained, though not so much to her satisfaction as she could have wished, the body being in a state of putrefaction, not possible to be approached without disgust and abhorrence, nor to be distinguished from any other mass of corruption, when she had caused it to be dug out of the grave, in which it had been buried on the spot where he had been killed among the other victims of the day, and was now returning home when she had happily been found by his people.

Though my master was as much unversed in the regular rules of politeness as of war, good nature taught him the essentials of the one, as reason had of the other. He heard out her story, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it; and consoling her with some general remarks on the error of indulging immoderate grief for things not to be remedied, offered to send her under a sufficient escort to his own habitation, where she might remain in safety, and have the conversation and attendance of his wo-

men till the conclusion of the campaign, when he would convey her himself to the next sea-port, in order to her returning to her own country.

Though she would have looked upon any attempt to console her as the highest affront in another situation, her present circumstances made her think it not proper to shew any resentment of it to him; beside, there was something in his appearance that somehow made it less disagreeable from him than it would have been from any other person, and would possibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention of *his women* alarmed her delicacy, and set her virtue on its guard.

Resolving, therefore, to have this cleared up before she would give any direct answer to his offer, she expressed her high sense of his kindness in the politest terms; and entering into a general conversation, among other questions of mere curiosity, asked him in a careless manner whom he meant by *his women*, and in what capacity they served him?

Such a question was more than he desired, though he had inconsiderately laid himself open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could justify his deceit, he answered her directly and without preface, that they served him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleased to continue with him; nor did he desire any other service from them.

Though she was a good deal disconcerted at this answer, she had the address not to seem to understand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himself into a meaning less offensive to her modesty; to give him an opportunity for which, "I presume, Sir," (replied she) "you mean

" that they wait upon your lady, or perform the
" other domeftic offices of your family, in which
" women fervants only are employed?"

" No really, madam" (anfwered he) " that was
" not my meaning. I have no lady for them to
" wait upon, nor do they live fo immediately in
" my own family as to have any domeftic em-
" ployment in it."

" How, Sir! are you not married?"

" Not particularly to any one perfon, madam."
——" That's very ftrange!" (faid fhe, pleafed at having gained fo material a piece of intelligence, and refolving to purfue the converfation). " That is really very ftrange! And pray, Sir, are
" thefe ladies *Europeans?* I fuppofe" (fighing heavily, and wiping her eyes) " they are the un-
" happy widows of fuch officers as have fallen in
" the fervice, to whom you have fhewn the fame
" politenefs and humanity as I now experience
" from you."

" I am forry, madam," (anfwered he, to fatisfy her curiofity at once, and put a ftop to queftions which began to be troublefome) " to be ob-
" liged to undeceive you in an opinion fo fa-
" vourable to me; they are all native *Americans*,
" by whom I have had children, and in whofe
" unfeigned affection and eafy complying tem-
" pers I find fuch fatisfaction, that I never fhall
" quit them to attach myfelf folely to any one
" woman, however fuperior to them in the ad-
" vantages of beauty and education; not, indeed,
" that they want qualifications to raife both love
" and efteem, as you will find when you have
" been fome time among them."

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to underftand it, inftantly put an end to the plea-

ſure ſhe had begun to find in his converſation, and determined her as to his propoſal. "I am "much obliged to you for your civil offer, Sir," (ſaid ſhe, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal courteſy) "but I cannot accept of it. I "have not the leaſt deſire for the converſation of "*Squaws*, and am in haſte to leave this ſavage "place; for which reaſon I ſhall take it as a fa-"vour if you will ſend ſome of your people to "guard me to the next *Engliſh* ſettlement to-"morrow morning. At preſent I am quite ex-"hauſted with fatigue, and want ſome reſt, if "the diſtreſs of my heart will permit me to take "any."

This thought recalled the remembrance of her loſs: She burſt into a flood of tears, and my maſter withdrew, after finding that his attempts to conſole her only aggravated her grief, and gave offence to her delicacy.

Unverſed as he was in the ways of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the ſex, which in every ſtate are the ſame, not to ſee through this change in her behaviour; but the diſcovery had no other effect than to confirm him in his contempt for ſuch hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding ſhe continued in the ſame mind next morning, he made the beſt proviſion he could for her journey, and ſent her away with a ſufficient guard, forcing upon her a purſe of gold, (*in which I was*) to defray any accidental expence for which ſhe might be unprovided, in caſe ſhe ſhould not directly meet a ſhip ready to carry her to *Europe*.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence. CHRYSAL's mistress marries, and he changes his service for that of an old master.

AS soon as my mistress found herself out of sight of my late master, she gave vent to that indignation and rage of disappointment which she had thought proper to suppress while in his presence. "Insensible brute!" (said she) "Not quit "his odious *Squaws* for any woman! And to have "the rudeness to tell me so to my face! It shews "his gross, low taste, for which such animals are "fittest."

Then pausing for some moments; "What a "charming figure!" (continued she, sighing softly) "Such a size! Such strength and ease in eve"ry motion! And then the manly beauty in his "looks! Had I but the polishing of him! I was "too hasty. I should have waited to insinuate "myself into his heart by degrees. I could not "have failed of success. My husband was as "strongly attached to another when first I under"took him. Oh! dearest, best of men! Never "shall I meet your fellow! Never shall another "possess your place in this faithful, wretched "heart."——

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the same strain during her journey, and always ended the same way.

On her arrival at the sea-port, she had the mortification to find that she must wait some time for a passage home, all the ships which were there having sailed a few days before.

But her vexation at this disappointment was considerably lightened by the conversation of several companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken such offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in those savage countries, that he had hired a substitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming soldiers or converting savages.

Extremes are never lasting. The violence of my mistress's grief had been too much for nature to support, and was beginning to abate of itself; when my late master awoke another passion that would soon have supplanted it; and though he did not pursue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inspired a warmth ready to receive any other impression.

As the chaplain's function and her rank, not to omit the accomplishments of both, seemed to point them to each other as the most proper companions, it was not strange that they should soon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy should be insensibly improved into a tender passion. They made *tête-à-tête* parties at games which no one else in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleasurable resort in *England*, and of the amusements pursued at them; and they raised their own consequence in the

the eyes of each other, by boasting of acquaintances with persons they knew only by name.

Such uncommon accomplishments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, because their own met the same complaisance; and found a pleasure in being deceived by one whom it was an equal pleasure to deceive.

But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were nearest to being so; though far from being well-bred, they knew most of the common ceremonies, in which good-breeding is by many thought to consist, but which really are the incumbrances of it, of any persons there; and consequently appeared to enjoy those advantages in the highest degree. They regulated the assemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made fashions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amusement and concern.

Thus *cut out* for each other, it was impossible for this accomplished pair, not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their respective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living husband, and the happy bridegroom pleasing himself with the thought, that the high accomplishments of his lady would increase his interest with his noble patrons.

To crown their happiness, in a few days after they were married, an *English* man of war put in there, in its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their passage. Such an opportunity was not to be missed: They accepted his offer with the greatest joy, and in return made a

party and entertainment for him, when he won *me* from my miſtreſs, at a game of *brag*, the only game indeed at which he thought himſelf a match for her.

Though I had no reaſon to regret leaving her ſervice, my preſent change gave me no great pleaſure as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new maſter being the captain with whom I had left the *Spaniſh* coaſt, who had at length been made ſo happy, as to be ordered home.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR.

(CHRYSAL'*s maſter having in the courſe of his voyage home given offence to his officers, by his prudential regard to his own ſafety; to obviate any bad conſequence which might attend their complaining to his ſuperiors, he reſolved to employ* CHRYSAL'*s mediation in his favour, as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in* ENGLAND.—Vol. I. chap. x.)

His arrival in *England* preſented him with a ſcene, that confirmed this reſolution, and made him wiſh he had not been in ſuch haſte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one ſhip, in which was diſplayed the dreadful ſignal of the execution of the commander. The ſight appalled

his soul, conscience anticipating the stroke of justice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate.

He had not time to brood over these gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a state of mind scarce less unhappy than that of the criminal.

As soon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy in every face he met, was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleasure in such company. When he had answered a few general questions of course, he went away to the ship of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn some account of this shocking scene, for he had not had resolution to make any enquiry about it; nor even to attend to the conversation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my master signified his curiosity, which his friend promised to gratify *over their bottle*, as soon as they should be alone after dinner.

Accordingly, when *the coast was clear*, "You "desire information in any affair (said he) that "has given our corps the deepest wound we have "ever received. The circumstances are many, "and mysterious; but I will strive to give you a "notion of it in as few words as possible, for it "can be no pleasure to either of us to dwell upon "such a subject.

"In the beginning of the war, soon after you "went to *America*, the unfortunate man who has "this day fallen a sacrifice to the humour of the "times, was sent out with a fleet, to counteract

"the schemes of the enemy, and relieve a fortress "of ours which they were then besieging. (This "was the purport of his *public orders*; but it will "appear to you presently, that he must have re-"ceived *private* ones, of a very different nature, "from those who at that time had the conduct of "affairs.)

"Instead of making the expedition necessary to "have carried his orders into execution, with "effect, he trifled away the time here, in such a "shameful manner, using every frivolous excuse "he could devise to delay his departure, that the "voice of the public was raised against him; and "it was found necessary to appoint another to the "command, in his place, in order to silence their "clamour; but unfortunately for him, he sailed "the very day before his appointed successor was "to have set out to supersede him.

"The same dilatory conduct threw a damp upon "every thing he attempted to do. He seemed re-"solved upon nothing; but though he was in-"vested with the fullest powers to act as he saw "proper himself, he called councils of war to deli-"berate upon every, the most trifling occasion, "that he might have the sanction of their advice, "to excuse his neglect, and often direct disobe-"dience of his orders; for you well know, that *a* "*council of war always speaks the sense of the com*-"*mander*.

"One instance of his proceeding in this man-"ner, will be sufficient to justify this remark. He "had been ordered to call at another fortress in "his way, and take from thence a reinforcement "for the garrison of that which he was sent to re-"lieve: On his arrival there, instead of demand-"ing that reinforcement peremptorily, as his or-

"ders empowered him, and making the expedi- "tion, which the urgency of the occasion requir- "ed, he shewed such indifference to the enterprise "by his delays, and expressed such diffidence of "his success, that the commanding officer took "the alarm; and following his example, called a "council of war to consider whether he should "send it, which on mature deliberation he ab- "solutely refused, on account of the danger of "weakening his own garrison, in case it should be "attacked; whereas, it was notorious that could "never happen, if this unhappy man did his duty, "as the force he had was sufficient to keep the "command of the sea, and prevent any such at- "tempt. But far from urging this, he quietly ac- "quiesced in the officer's excuse, and sailed away "without the reinforcement, for which alone he "had been ordered to stop there.

"On the same principles, when at length he "came in sight of the place, the siege of which "was pushed with the greatest vigour, he excused "his sending any relief to it, on a pretence of the "danger of entering the harbour, as if any mili- "tary operation could be free from danger, and "sailed away to seek a fleet of the enemy which "was coming to assist the siege, and which he "came up with sooner than he wished.

"An engagement now was unavoidable; but, "still he had it in his power to prevent any effect "from it, which he notoriously did, by trifling "away his time in vain unnecessary *manœuvres*, "and pretending to come to action, at a distance "too great for him to do any thing.

"The enemy, whose interest it was to avoid an "engagement, in which their most sanguine hopes "could not promise them success, availed them-

" selves of this conduct, and made their escape; " after having, from the superiority which his *keep-* " *ing aloof* in this manner gave them, treated very " roughly a part of his fleet that had advanced " with less caution, and come really to action.

" This served him as a pretence for calling a " council of war next day, by the advice of which, " instead of pursuing the enemy, who had evi- " dently fled from him, or making any attempt to " relieve the fortress which was besieged, obvious- " ly the first object of his being sent out, he re- " turned directly to the other, from which he was " to have taken the reinforcement, as I mention- " ed before, to defend that from the danger " brought upon it solely by his own conduct, leav- " ing the former, deprived thus of every prospect " of relief, to take its fate; and giving up the " honour of his country, by flying from an enemy " whom he might have vanquished, and who had " fled from him before."

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this, and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the consequence of this affair to a certain corps.*

" THE consequence of so strange a conduct " was, the nation took fire, and, with one " voice, demanded satisfaction for such a sacrifice " of their interest and honour. He was there-

" fore

" fore not only deprived of his command, but " also sent home a prisoner; and, after suffering " every indignity and abuse, which the rage of a " licentious populace, broken loose from all " bounds, could suggest, brought to his trial, " found guilty of *neglecting to do all in his power* " *to destroy the enemy*, and for that crime has this " day suffered the sentence of the law; a sen- " tence, not more unexpected by him and extra- " ordinary in itself, than in the manner it was " passed, and afterwards attempted to be reversed " ed by those who had passed it, when they re- " flected on the danger of establishing a prece- " dent that might one day come home to them- " selves.

" For persuaded (perhaps by their knowledge " of the true motives of his conduct) that nothing " more was meant by the trial than to amuse the " public, they resolved to act their parts in the " farce, and found him guilty, as I have said, of " such a part only of the charge against him, as " common sense could never conceive punishable " with death, it being impossible to acquit him " absolutely of the whole, without involving " themselves in his guilt; by which means, they " expected to save both his life and their own " credit. But such *trimming* seldom answers: " *the tables were now turned*; and it was resolved " to carry even this lame sentence into execution, " with the utmost severity.

" Alarmed at a measure so contrary to their ex- " pectations, his judges were driven to their wit's " end, and, from a provident regard to *themselves*, " left nothing unattempted to save *him*. They " retracted, as far as was in their power, their " own judgment: they petitioned the ministry;

" they applied to the whole body of the Legisla-
" ture. They prayed, they expostulated, they
" wept; but all was in vain. His fate was de-
" termined; and they only drew upon themselves
" that contempt which such inconsistency deserv-
" ed.

" From this general account of his conduct, it
" must have appeared to you, that he acted by *se-*
" *cret* orders, directly opposite to his *public* ones,
" as no man, however prostituted in principle,
" however infatuated by fear, (neither of which,
" it was well known, was his case) could other-
" wise possibly have acted in such a manner, the
" inevitable consequences of which were, disgrace
" and death. But, if any doubt should remain on
" your mind, from the inconsistency of man's ac-
" tions at different times, the least attention to
" the following circumstances will effectually re-
" move it.

" Repeated informations of the enemy's design
" upon that place had been sent to those in power,
" for a considerable time before; but no notice
" was taken of them, to reinforce the garrison, or
" even order the officers regularly belonging to it,
" to attend their duty, till the siege was actually be-
" gun; when this unfortunate man was sent, but
" so late, that the common impediments of con-
" trary winds might very possibly have delayed
" him so long as to defeat the design of his going,
" even had he exerted himself with the greatest
" ardour.

" Had it also been really intended that he should
" reinforce the garrison, a force proper for that
" purpose would have been sent directly from
" home, without subjecting him to the farther
" delay of stopping for it at another place, where it

" might

"might not be to be spared, as proved to be the "case.

"And lastly, had he not had secret reasons, "which he thought sufficient to justify his con- "duct, it is not to be imagined that he would "have wasted the time before he sailed; that he "would have accepted the refusal of the com- "manding officer of the fortress, from which he "was to have taken the reinforcement; that he "would not have attempted at least to throw some "relief into the place, and that he would not have "fought the enemy's fleet, when he had the fair- "est prospect of defeating it; for the tenor of "his former life acquitted him, as I have observ- "ed, of all suspicion of cowardice, or traiterous "correspondence with the foes of his country.

"His conduct at, and after his trial, confirm- "ed these remarks. Depending on support from "those in power, he neglected the only measure "prudence could have suggested for his defence, "which was, to have retorted the charge of his "miscarriage upon his very accusers, and per- "plexed the cause with such a variety of matter, "about *disobedience to signals, and breach of dis- "scipline*, as to blind the world, and bewilder his "judges, so that they should be glad to have ac- "quitted him, if only to get rid of the plague "of the enquiry; a method which experience had "shown to be effectual, in as flagrant a case as "his: and, even after he was condemned, his be- "haviour proved that he expected a pardon to "the last moment, for a crime which he had com- "mitted in obedience to their orders. Why he "did not produce those orders in his vindication, "must have been, that they were only verbal "ones; which, in the blind lust of ministerial

"confidence and favour, he had been weak e-
"nough to take.

"The reason of his being so basely deserted, is
"too obvious. The administration of those who
"had employed him, had been such a series of
"blunders, (not to call it by a severer name),
"that they had not only been supplanted by an-
"other set, who promised better things, but were
"also obliged to give him up, *as a sin-offering* to
"the rage of the people, as protecting or par-
"doning him would have implied a participation
"of his guilt: And in this light the other party
"viewed it so strongly, that they exerted all their
"strength to have saved him, in hopes of being
"able, by his means, to gain a clue, to guide
"them through some of those labyrinths of ini-
"quitous and false policy, which they suspected,
"but could not otherwise detect, to the entire o-
"verthrow of their rivals.

"This so absolutely reversed the whole scene;
"that they who would have supported, now found
"themselves obliged to crush him, in their own
"defence, which, as it was the most popular
"measure, they were still able to do.

"There is but one thing more necessary for me
"to add; and that is, the motive for their giving
"him such secret orders; which, as far as reason
"can judge, in such dark, confused mysteries,
"must have been this——

"Provoked at the repeated insults and injustice
"of the *French*, the ministry here had precipitate-
"ly plunged themselves into a war, without be-
"ing prepared, or even determined to pursue it;
"and then, like a parcel of children who have
"exhausted all their strength and resolution, in
"one spiteful assault, stood in a state of stupefac-

"tion,

" tion, utterly at a loſs how to proceed or retreat; " till rouzed at length by the preparations and " menaces of the enemy, they unluckily blunder- " ed, in their fright, upon the wretched expedient " of letting them take this fortreſs, that, for the " recovery of it, they might have a pretence for " giving up to them thoſe places about which the " diſpute began; and ſo *botch up* a peace any way, " to get rid of a war they found themſelves un- " able to manage.

" The conſequence of this notable ſtroke of po- " licy was, the ſpirit of the people was inflamed " to ſuch a degree, by this diſgrace upon their " arms, that they have puſhed on the war with " a reſolution little ſhort of madneſs; and the " ſcheme, which the miniſters had ſo wiſely laid " for their eſcape, only ſealed their ruin.

" This, my friend, is a ſhort but juſt ſketch of " this unfortunate affair, to which I ſhall only " add one circumſtance, to prove what I ſaid of his " being *ſacrificed to the humour of the times.* The " officer who commanded in the fortreſs which " was beſieged, and who, in the defence of it, " had betrayed a want of every qualification ne- " ceſſary for ſuch an office, *but courage,* and had " even let that be over-ruled by the inſtances of " his officers, who were tired of fatigues and " dangers from which they ſaw no proſpect of " relief, to ſurrender it at laſt, without any abſo- " lute neceſſity, was loaded with honours of eve- " ry kind, in reward of a merit merely negative " at beſt; that is, for not having done the very " worſt in his power, and ſurrendered it at firſt, " without making any defence.

" I have thus gratified your curioſity, in the " beſt manner in my power. If I have made any

" miſtakes,

"mistakes, they are not those of intention; but "have proceeded from the inability of reason to "trace such mysterious actions to their real motives. One observation, though, I know I cannot be mistaken in, which is, that this affair has "given *a wound to our corps*, (as I observed before), "*which it can never recover*. For, after such an "example, what officer of any rank can expect "to escape, should he neglect to do his duty in "the fullest manner, however powerful his private motives to the contrary may be?

"For my own part, I cannot say it yet affects "me much. I am poor; and therefore must push. If "I ever have the good luck to be otherwise, I know "the consequence; and will rather quit the service than hazard being shot, as I know must be "any man's fate, who shall hereafter be found to "fail in the performance of his duty, from a "prudential regard to the preservation of his life "or fortune; however great that fortune, or "powerful his family.—And so *here's to you, neck "or nothing* is now the word."

The effect which this whole account had upon my master, may be easily conceived. He *pledged* his friend, though without naming *the toast*; and, assenting to his remarks by an heavy sigh, took his leave without saying a word.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL changes his service. He gets a view of a court of CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant, on the delays of the law. A whimsical application of an old story, produces the strange effect of putting a counsellor out of countenance. The necessity of absolute power in some governments; with a common decision, by which nothing is decided.*

"AS soon as my master returned to his ship, he "took *me* from his purse once more, and "looking earnestly at me for some moments, "We must part!" said he, with a sigh, "we "must part! but I hope to good purpose. *Thou* "only wast the cause of that conduct, which now "gives me fear; exert therefore thy influence e-"qually, where I now send thee, and thou wilt "excuse my fault, if it is one."

"Tears, at the thought of losing me, here "choaked his utterance. He gave me a last kiss, "and sent me directly away, in company with "a considerable number more, to mediate his "peace.

"As the delicate nature of this transaction re-"quired some address, he entrusted the manage-"ment of it to his purser, who had convinced "him, by many instances, of his sagacity in the "methods of obtaining an influence over the "great." *

My new master's road leading through a city, where a matter of great moment was under judicial

* See Vol. I.—Chap. xi.

cial determination, he waited for the event to gratify a natural curiosity.

The affair was this. A *fore-mast-man*, in a *guard-ship*, lying in one of the neighbouring harbours, had, by repeated misbehaviour, in going clandestinely on shore, contrary to the express orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him *a dozen at the gang-way*, in order to terrify others from following his example.

Instead of being reclaimed by this punishment, the fellow persisted to misbehave in such a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his disposition, discharged him from the ship, to avoid the pain of punishing him any more.

This was just what the wretch wanted. Accordingly, he went directly to a prostituted, *pettifogging* attorney, who had before set him on the scheme, and employed him to sue the captain at law for an assault, in punishing him in the harbour, where he had no power so to do.

In a country governed by laws, they must regularly take their course, in every instance, however flagrant in its particular circumstances.

After all the preliminary delays of practice, which, grievous as they may in some circumstances be to an individual, are yet the safety of the public, the affair was now brought to a legal decision. You are too well acquainted with *the forms of law*, to require a minute account of all which were observed in this case. But there was one incident which I cannot pass over.

As this was a matter that importantly concerned the interest of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the *guard-ships* in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the

trial,

trial, in order to inform the court in the usages of their service.

One of those, who had never seen a court of *civil judicature* before, but was a man of natural good sense, and some reading, having listened to the unintelligible pleadings, and gross exaggerations of *the counsel* on both sides of the question, especially *those hired* in the prosecution, till his patience was quite exhausted, at length arose, and having obtained permission from the judge to speak, addressed himself to the court in these words:

"I am sent here by those to whom the King "has entrusted the conduct of his navy, to explain the nature and rules of our service to this "court, in case I see any danger of their forming a wrong judgment of it, from inexperience "in a matter so much out of their way.

"The little gentleman yonder has spent so "much breath, and shewn such great reading on "the subject, that I imagine it is proper for me "to make him some answer, which I shall do in as "few words as possible, being not half so *long-winded* as he. But first, I must beg leave to tell "him a story, to conform to rule.

"I have read in a book, (for I perceive that "common sense signifies nothing here, if not "supported by a quotation, it matters not whether to the purpose or not!) that a certain philosopher having declaimed one day for a considerable length of time before *Alexander the Great*, at the head of his army, on the duties "of a general, the Emperor turned about to "*Parmenio*, one of his generals, who stood near "him, and asked him, what he thought of his "speech?——Sire, (answered *Parmenio*), my o-

"pinion is, that *I never heard a fool talk so learnedly*——

"I make no applications. All that I say on "this occasion is, that I am sure that gentleman "has never been at sea, and consequently knows "nothing of the service, on which he has been "haranguing with such vehemence and elocution. He has expatiated most pathetically on "the injustice of inflicting corporal punishment, "without a legal trial and condemnation; and "flourished on the danger of such an invasion of "liberty. These, to be sure, are fine words; "but I much doubt whether they are properly applied on this occasion. The most perfect form "of government is allowed to be *absolute despotism*, "as best calculated to work its effects without delay. In all the communities in this world, I "doubt if there is one, where immediate obedience to the command of the governor is so indispensibly necessary to the safety of the whole, "or where individuals are so insensible to every "other motive to obedience but fear, as in a man "of war.

"I have myself the honour to command a "ship, in which I have five hundred men under "me, the greatest part of whom, (I am sorry to "say it), are the *out-casts* of human nature; as, "from some unhappy circumstances, is, and perhaps must always be, the universal case in our "service. Now, as instances daily occur, in "which a moment's delay or hesitation to execute "my orders, though attended with the greatest "difficulty, or most imminent danger, must evidently hazard the loss of the ship, and every "life in her; I desire that gentleman to inform "me how I am to act, should one of the men,

" whom I order, ſuppoſe, to cut away a yard that's
" broke in the ſlings, refuſe to go aloft, and tell
" me I have no right to puniſh him, till he is re-
" gularly tried and found guilty! Shall I admit
" of ſuch an anſwer, to be an example to the
" reſt? Or ſhall I puniſh him with ſuch ſeverity
" on the ſpot, by my own mere authority, as to
" terrify any other from imitating him? The
" anſwer to this plain queſtion will determine the
" affair under conſideration. If it is ſaid, that,
" in the preſent caſe, the ſhip's being in the har-
" bour makes a difference,—let us ſuppoſe her on
" fire there, and that difference will vaniſh. In
" a word, if the abſolute authority indiſpenſibly
" neceſſary for carrying on our ſervice, in ſome
" inſtances, is attempted to be abridged in any,
" it will of courſe be, at length, diſputed in all,
" and the ſervice ruined. All that can be done,
" is, to be cautious not to truſt it in improper
" hands."

This method of reaſoning changed the face of the affair. The counſellor hung down his head, and ſlunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for public liberty vaniſhed; and the jury ſimply *found the fact*, but left the *point* of law to be determined by the judges: ſo that, after all this expence and trouble, matters remained in the ſame ſtate of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *master joins a remarkable set of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Account of the enterprize on which his late master's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands.*

(*THE purser having on his arrival in* LONDON *parted with* CHRYSAL *regularly, in the execution of the commission entrusted to him by his captain;* CHRYSAL, NOW IN THE SHAPE OF A GUINEA, *after several changes of service, and a variety of curious adventures, has fallen into the hands of a* PHYSICIAN *and* AUTHOR; *who, having shewn him many of the mysteries of the latter profession, proceeds to introduce him into new scenes.*——Vol. I. p. 141.)

Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleasing prospect they opened to him, my master proceeded to *figure* as usual in his variegated sphere. Accordingly he descended from his *aerial citadel*, and going out *to visit his patients*, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a set of *critics*, and *choice spirits, souls of sentiment and fire*, who were going that evening upon an expedition that was to immortalize their names.

This was no less than to assume the modest power of making laws that should affect the property of a number of their fellow subjects; the execution of which they were resolved to enforce by the mild, and equitable means, which the respectable legislature of the mob always use to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Those,

Those, who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were *the actors of plays*, and *interludes*, of which, as the works of *genius*, and calculated for the entertainment of *the idle*, they claimed the sole, and absolute rule.

You conclude from this, that they must have been persons of learning, and large fortune, whose affluence gave them leisure to attend to subjects, which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either *blanks in the creation*, whom a superficial smattering of letters had filled with such an opinion of themselves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of industry, as beneath their dignity, though at the same time they were barely able to subsist without it, by all the little shifts of œconomy; or tradesmen, almost absolutely illiterate, who, from a preposterous ambition of hiding an ignorance, that was not any reproach to their station, set up for the arbiters of taste, on the strength of a set of phrases picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning; and neglected the business by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a shew of knowledge, that could be of no use to them.

When this illustrious set had sufficiently conned their several parts, in the great enterprize which they were going to undertake, and raised their resolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the scene of action, the theatre; and calling for a *bill*, I was *changed* by my master to pay his *club*, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who *changed* me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admission.

These changes of my service, however, did not prevent my seeing the process of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary, as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full insight into the nature and mysteries of every part of that profession.

I see you desire to know my sentiments on a subject that has been canvassed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curiosity is natural, and shall be gratified at a proper time; but at present I must not interrupt the account of this transaction.

From the manner in which those self-made legislators had talked, when together, of every circumstance in the management of a theatre, and profession of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to overturn the whole present system of the stage, and institute another on principles directly opposite, according to their own ideas of perfection.

But that was not the case. Among all the errors and abuses, against which they declaimed with such vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought most interesting to themselves in particular. This was the right, which reason, and law, gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the stage in London, before it had been brought, by much labour and expence, to such a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the public, it had been the custom, after a certain part of the representation was over, to admit persons for less than was paid at the beginning.

The obvious reason of this, was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the most they

could get, rather than keep the houſe empty. But when the paſſion for ſeeing plays aroſe to its preſent height, this expedient appeared to be no longer neceſſary, and therefore was diſuſed; a change, which thoſe who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juſtified, by alleging the enhanced ſalaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery and decorations of the ſtage, ſince the time when that cuſtom was introduced, which they ſaid required reimburſement, by a method, that could not juſtly be taken offence at, *as none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.*

Such a meaſure was moſt alarming to theſe men of taſte, ſome of whom denied themſelves the pleaſure of going to the beginning of the performance, *becauſe they were not able to pay the full price;* as the others, *could not get from behind their compters before it was half ended;* and, for theſe good reaſons, both thought it the higheſt grievance, to have a cuſtom aboliſhed that had been ſo convenient to them.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the performance began, they all aroſe, and, without any reſpect to the reſt of the audience, interrupted the players in the moſt outrageous manner, nor would deſiſt, till the managers ſhould promiſe to redreſs the grievance which affected them ſo ſeverely, and take half prices as before.

This was too flagrant a violation of juſtice, to be ſubmitted to ſo ſuddenly. The managers therefore refuſed; upon which, *theſe redreſſers of grievances* gave a looſe to their reſentment, at ſuch an inſtance of diſobedience to their authority; and tore the houſe to pieces, doing more damage to the *proprietors, than their own entire worldly ſubſtance could repair.*

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the scene of action supplies matter for mirth to those whose trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried against law and reason. Enquiry into the cause of this. The rise of the profession of an actor.

WHEN these men of genius and public spirit had thus gallantly accomplished their enterprize, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their resentment, should their orders not be obeyed.

The appearance of the house, after this ravage, and the looks of the actors when they ventured to creep out of their holes, seemed to realize the mimic scenes usually exhibited there. All was havock, desolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, sceptres, candlesticks, and broken benches were jumbled together: Sovereigns, and sweepers, lords, link-boys, dutchesses, and cinder-winches joined in one common lamentation of their fate.

This, however, lasted not long. Their hearts were not formed of stuff, for grief to make a deep impression on; nor were they so unaccustomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any mischance. Their concern therefore wore off with their fright; and one of them, resuming his character of turning every thing to ridicule, marched with solemn pace and rueful countenance, up to the motley ruins now collected into an heap, and, with some droll variations, apt to the occasion, *spouted* over them a tragic speech, in all the emphasis and trick *of wo.* The humour instantly ran through them *all.* Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied

in

in cracking vaillanous jests on each other's *undoing*.

But the managers had suffered too severely in their property, to be in so merry a mood. They consulted among themselves, and *with the sages of the law*, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redress for such injustice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpose. Law gave way to licentiousness; and they were obliged to submit to the most intolerable of all tyrannies, *that of the mob*.

You are surprized that such things should be, in a country governed by equal, and established laws. In speculation, it must seem strange; but the least acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconsistencies still grosser. There is something, however, in the circumstances of this case, which deserves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which such injustice could proceed.

When the system of divine worship, which is now professed in these parts of the world, was first proposed to mankind, the human mind was a slave to superstitions, which were a disgrace to that portion of reason given for its direction.

By a perversion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of those superstitions, though professedly designed in honour of the Deity, was attended with *games* and *scenical interludes*, in which the grossest immoralities received the sanction of of religion, and were practised openly, as pleasing to him. This was done, to attach the passions of the multitude, and satisfy their curiosity with sensible representations, in order to prevent their making rational enquires into the grounds of those superstitions,

superstitions, the principles of which were subservient to the policy of the ruling powers.

A religion instituted on purpose to reclaim man from immoralities and superstitions, and restore him to the dignity of his nature, necessarily struck at every thing that conduced to their support: Accordingly, the persons appointed to propagate it, exerted all their endeavours against those games and interludes, both as a part of the superstitious worship which they wanted to abolish, and as, in themselves, subversive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened and made still more alluring by every incentive art and pomp of expence.

For this purpose, reason, as well as religion, supplied ready and powerful arguments; but not content to wait for the slow effect of these, they strove to prejudice those whom they could not persuade; and, to obviate the imitation of their example, raised an abhorrence to the persons of all concerned in such representations, casting them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of society: A method, that in one respect defeated its own design; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example.

Nor did they stop here. By an error too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded *from the abuse, against the use* of the stage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors for the faults of the present.

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common consequences of excess of zeal. The professed intent of theatrical representations defeated, by this absurd prejudice against actors. The vices against which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of remedying this, and other abuses.

HOWEVER the occasion might there seem to justify this excess of zeal, when the cause ceased, the effect should in reason have ceased also, and these general censures have been repealed. The superstitions, which were the foundation of the first charge against the stage, have been long abolished: nor are the absurdities and immoralities, which gave offence to reason and virtue, any longer practised there. On the contrary, the professed intent of theatrical representations at present is, to insinuate instruction under the pleasing appearance of entertainment; to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by showing the evils inseparably attendant on vice; to regulate the passions, by displaying the danger of indulging them too far; and to put folly out of countenance, by holding it up to ridicule.

Now, as experience has proved the stage capable of answering these great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into disrepute? what more unjust, than to consign to infamy, those who exert the finest powers of the human mind and body, to accomplish this end in the most pleasing manner? Yet such is the absurdity of man, that while persons of the most exalted rank and sacred character, not only frequent

the

the theatre, but also compose works to be represented on it, and evidently value themselves more on possessing the abilities requisite to compose them, than on all their other distinctions in life, those from whose action such compositions receive their force and beauty, are held in disrepute, and subject to the severest disadvantages, only for acting them. If it is no disgrace *to write a play*, why should it be any *to act it?*

It is true, the consequences of this prejudice, are not so severe here as in other countries, but still they are such as reason is ashamed of. If actors are not literally excluded from the protection of the laws, they want support to avail themselves of that protection, as in the case which gave rise to these reflections: if they are not *actually (for literally they are)* excluded from the rites of religion, they want encouragement to participate in them.

I see you are ready to object to the utility of the stage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it, and to justify the disrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it arose solely from their profession. But a moment's reflection would suggest answers to both these objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the stage, surely the blame should fall on those who have a legal power to prevent such abuse of the institution of it. If the actors are immoral in their lives, should it not be considered that they are prejudged from their profession, and deprived of one of the strongest inducements to virtue, that is, *reputation*, before they are proved to be guilty of vice?

The

The consequence of this is, that too few enter into the profession till after they have lost their reputation, or are driven by mere necessity; by which means, they reflect that disgrace upon it, which they are thought to suffer from it; and as they are sensible that they are precluded, by this prejudice, from all possibility of recovering or preserving it by the most careful deportment, they become desperate, and proceed till they even lose the sense of unavailing shame.

Whereas, if a different conduct was observed to them, if the brand of reprobation was taken off, and the profession established in that credit which the abilities indispensibly necessary to eminence in it deserve, genius would be no longer damped by apprehension of reproach; more persons of good character would not scruple going on the stage, as they could preserve it there; nor vice seem to receive encouragement from the public favour, *because, from this circumstance, unhappily too often entangled with merit*; but the life of the actor reflect the sentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example.

Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All that is necessary would be, to refuse admission on the stage to all who are *notorious for vice of any kind*; to banish from it *such as should become so after, however eminent in their merits*; and *to support the profession by the civil power*, against the tyranny of the mob; so that the lives and properties of all concerned in it should be secure from suffering such licentious outrage and injustice as no other subjects are exposed to, and as are equally a reproach and insult to good government and common sense.

Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them insolent, or slacken their endeavours to please. Their very being depends on public favour, the bare withholding of which is punishment sufficiently severe; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmost abilities, and always observe proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know, that if they are neglected, they cannot live: On the contrary, it would enable them to rise to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched necessity of prostituting their own judgment to please the gross taste of their tyrants.

Many other arguments might be alleged against this grievous and shameful abuse; but what I have said is sufficient to convince candid reason; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAP. XII.

The system of policy by which CHRYSAL'S *master governed his state. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from success. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.*

THE day after this great affair was thus *equitably* settled, on the *treasurer's* making up his week's account, I came into the possession of the *manager*, who, having some occasion for money, put *me* into his pocket.

The

The meafures of my new mafter's government in his little empire, were the ftrongeft burlefque on the policy of the world, the greateft fovereign in which had not more intrigues *of ftate* to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealoufy of the feveral candidates for his *royal favour*.

But all this buftle did not embarrafs him in the leaft. He had the addrefs to *play off* one party againft another; and, *by never engaging himfelf particularly to any, was able to manage all.* A method, by the by, that might fuggeft an hint not unufeful to politicians in an higher fphere.

But the part of his conduct that was moft curious, and gave me the greateft pleafure, was his manner of *parrying* the attacks of the *authors* who were continually bringing him their works for reprefentation on the ftage, of which I had an opportunity of feeing many ftriking inftances.

As it is evidently the intereft of the manager of a theatre to exhibit thofe performances whofe merit is moft likely to gain the approbation of the public, and as no man who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition can be fuppofed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourfe between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ftrongeft appearances of reafon.

The reprefentation of a new piece neceffarily puts the manager to fome expence, and much trouble. If you add to this the natural anxiety about fuccefs, *for merit is often rejected by caprice or perfonal prejudice*, you would not wonder that he fhould be cautious what he brings upon the ftage, and prefer acting old ones, unattended with thefe

inconveniences, while the public will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reaſon why ſo few new pieces are performed, and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them, it being certain that there are as many good plays written now as at any former period of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of thoſe times ly together before you, and raiſe your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you conſider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loſt in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not ſo great reaſon to complain of the preſent decline of genius as you may have imagined.

I do not by this mean, that every one who pretends to write is poſſeſſed of that genius, or that all the pieces offered to the ſtage are proper for repreſentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indiſpenſable to ſucceſs in ſuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reaſon, and ſtrive to obtrude upon the public works which are a reproach to common ſenſe.

The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loſs how to ſpend his time, or wants to raiſe a little money, down he ſits, without more ado, and writes a play. The conſequence of this is, that the very reaſons which made him turn poet, neceſſarily preclude him from ſucceſs. *Idleneſs* prevents that care, that *limæ labor* which alone can make a performance proper for public repreſentation, and *diſtreſs* depreſſes the imagination, and binders its riſing to that *happy boldneſs* which is the eſſence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres, from intereſted motives, are often to blame

for

for rejecting *good* pieces, poets (or those who would be thought such) are much oftener culpable for offering them *bad* ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account, occasions the difficulty in their intercourse. But in this the contest is not equal. The word of the manager is decisive, while the poet has nothing left but to vent his resentment in unavailing (and often unjust) complaints and abuse, in which those who have least right are always loudest; for, enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all who presume to find fault with it.

But severe as it must be to suffer this, it is not the greatest difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not satisfied with the civil refusal of affected delays and excuses, they must have a direct answer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to support by such arguments as must give him pain, if he has either politeness or good nature; though, after all, instead of convincing them, he only gets theirs and their friends ill-will, and arms all their tongues against him.

It is not to be doubted but the *evasions* which managers use to *shift off good* pieces, are as grossly offensive to moral propriety, truth and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of *bad* ones can possibly be to reason; but as I did not happen to be witness to any instances of them, I shall confine my account to the latter.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's *master sits in judgment on some pieces offered to him. A poet of fashion enters. The arguments by which he supports his work against the objections of* CHRYSAL's *master, who makes some curious dramatical strictures. The poet driven from his last retreat, the interest of his great friends, by the common cant of the house's being* FULL *for the season, departs in a rage, denouncing their resentment, which* CHRYSAL's *master shews his reason not to fear the effects of.*

THE important morning after I came into the possession of the manager, was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his decisive answer.

Accordingly, as soon as he had breakfasted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for some time by one of those aspiring geniuses who sacrifice the solid happiness of independence to the vain ambition of *being well with the great*; submitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in public places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and consume time they know not how to make better use of, they fall upon this wise expedient of turning poets.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite address, and taken their seats with proper ceremony, the poet opened the business. "Well, Sir," (said he, with a smile of self-complacence) "you have perused that trifle! what is

"your

" your opinion? Heh! don't you think it will
" do?"

" Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with the ſmooth ſimper of a courtier) " you do it injuſtice by call-
" ing it a trifle! the piece has a great deal of me-
" rit, and reads very prettily in many places;
" but I fear it is not quite ſo proper for the
" ſtage!"—

" How! Sir, not proper for the ſtage! Pray,
" Sir, where does the impropriety ly? Several
" perſons of the firſt rank have read it, and found
" no ſuch thing. *His Grace* ſaid it abounded
" with the *vis comica*, Lord *Taſtely* was charmed
" with the *attic ſalt*, and *Sir Courtly* admired the
" elegance of the diction. Pray, Sir, where then
" can the impropriety ly? They are allowed to
" be judges."——

—" Pardon me, Sir, I do not preſume to call
" their judgment in queſtion in the leaſt. But—
" a—"

—" And why then ſhould you heſitate to re-
" ceive it? they will ſupport it with all their in-
" tereſt."—

—" That, Sir, I do not doubt. But—ſtill,
" Sir—the town"——

——" The town, Sir! and pray what of the
" town? Is the judgment of the town to be put
" into competition with theirs?"—

—" No, Sir! by no means! but ſtill the town
" is a very formidable and arbitrary judge, and
" will not admit its authority to be diſputed in
" ſuch matters as this."——

—" And pray, good Sir, what objections can
" the judicious town, or you, its learned advo-
" cate, make?"——

—" Sir,

—"Sir, you impose a very disagreeable task "upon me! I had much rather be excused."—

—"I do not in the least doubt that, Sir; but "my friends insist upon a direct answer. Either "receive the play, or say why you will not."—

—"Sir, I should be very sorry to give offence "to any gentleman; but since you insist upon "my opinion, Do not you think, Sir, the plot is "too—too—too domestic? Are not the intrigues "and tricks of servants too low a subject for po-"lite entertainment?"——

"How, Sir! have you any objection to ser-"vants? Do not they make a principal part in "all our modern comedies? Are the *Jeremys*, "and *Scrubs*, and *Phillises*, and a thousand others, "to be rejected because they are servants?"——

—"No, Sir! but consider they are not the "principal characters; nor does the plot turn "upon them. They come in as it were by acci-"dent; and indeed, except in the instances you "have mentioned, and perhaps a very few more, "they had much better be left out. It shews a "grossness of taste to stoop to them for enter-"tainment."——

—"And do not I introduce the masters and "mistresses too, as well as the servants? Are there "not country squires, and town fops, and fine "ladies?"——

—"Yes, Sir, you do introduce them, but in "a subordinate light; and merely to be the dupes "of their servants, without any business or im-"portance of their own."—

—"And pray, Sir, in what other light do "most masters appear? Ha! ha! ha!—Well, "*then*, it seems all your objections are to the

" fable. You have nothing to ſay againſt the " ſentiments and diction."—

—" The ſentiments, Sir, may be very proper, " and the diction ſuited to them; but you muſt " be ſenſible that the former objection affects " them all equally: the characters are too low, " and the ſentiments and diction conſequently " too coarſe."——

—" Sir,—Sir,—Sir,—I ſhall not enter into any " farther arguments with you. *His Grace* bids " me tell you he inſiſts upon your receiving it, " or giving him ſuch reaſons as he ſhall think ſa-" tisfactory, which muſt be very different from " thoſe inſignificant cavils."—

—" His Grace need not exert his authority to " influence my obedience. The leaſt hint of his " pleaſure were ſufficient; but unluckily I am " engaged for the whole ſeaſon! quite *full*."——

—" *Full!* why did you not tell me ſo at " firſt?"—

—" Becauſe you inſiſted on having my opi-" nion."—

—" Very well, Sir! I ſhall let his Grace and " all my friends know how you behaved. Let " me have the play! impertinent, inſolent, igno-" rant puppy!" muttered he as he went out.

" So," (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as he was gone) " I have now made him my enemy for ever. As " for his *noble friends*, they are above troubling " themſelves about any thing of the kind, and " give him leave to mention their names only to " get rid of his importunity."

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL's *master rejects the work of a poet, for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical strictures. The poet modestly insists, that his play is refused only because it wants the interest of the great, and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulsed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments against these laws. The poet refuses to conform to the present taste, and makes an appeal. One more poet refused only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on something that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his service, on an occasion not common.*

THE last poet was scarce down-stairs, when a footman *announced* the entrance of another.

My master did not think it necessary to observe so much ceremony with him as he had done with the former, but told him directly that he could not receive his piece.

Such a sentence struck the poet *all of an heap.* He was unable to speak, for some moments; but recovering himself at length, " Not receive it, " Sir! (said he), you surprize me. Pray, Sir, " why so?"——

" I am very loath to find fault, Sir! (answered " my master), but you seem to be utterly unac- " quainted with all *the laws of the drama.*"

—" The laws of the drama! they are but art. " I write from nature. Those laws have been " long laid aside. *Shakespeare* wrote without " *laws.*"—

—" So

—"So much the worse; but he is a dangerous "example to imitate. The local, temporary laws "of the ancient drama are laid aside, it is true; "but not the immutable, general laws of pro-"priety and reason. Your fable is inconnected, "improbable, and unaffecting."——

—"How, Sir! unaffecting! Can the fall of a "mighty empire be said to be unaffecting?"——

——"No, Sir; but the description of it most "certainly may, if not drawn with judgment "and force. And then your characters are ill "supported, and your sentiments and language "lost in the clouds."

——"What, Sir, can the sentiments of kings "and princes be too sublime?"

——"There is a wide difference between be-"ing sublime, and swollen out of nature."——

——"But what objection can you make to the "language. Is it not raised with *epithets* and *me-"taphors*, and all the figures of poetry?"——

——"Good Sir, poetical figures in poor lan-"guage look like embroidery on a blanket. They "only make its poverty ridiculous. Besides, your "*stalking in their stilts*, betrays you into many a "stumble in the dirt. Your figures frequently "fly in the face of common sense, and break "through every rule of grammar."——

——"Well, Sir, I shall consider of these par-"ticulars. The great objection I have heard "made to modern plays, is their want of busi-"ness; but this can never be charged to mine. "There is a *ghost*, and a battle, and a king de-"thron'd. Business enough and enough, I am "sure."——

—"Ghosts and battles, Sir, it is true, are "sometimes introduced with success; but then

"it

" it must be by a master in the art, else they have " a very contrary effect."——

——" I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is " to work upon the passions. In this I believe " you cannot say I have fail'd. The distress is " truly great."——

——" Distress, when out of character, loses " the appearance of reality, and becomes ridi" culous. A king in an alms-house, and a queen " begging from door to door, are images which " sink into burlesque."——

" It is very well, Sir! you may say what you " please, but I am satisfied it is not want of me" rit in my play that makes you refuse it. You " daily act much worse. If it had been recom" mended to you by some lord, you would have " found none of these faults; but merit may " starve without interest to support it now-a-days. " This is fine encouragement to genius truly; " and the public is like to be well entertained " while such men have it in their power to refuse " every thing that does not happen to please " themselves."——

Saying this he snatched up his play, leaving my master to please himself with the prospect of being *criticized upon in a news-paper*, and pulled to pieces in a scurrilous pamphlet.

He had not time to indulge these reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee.

As soon as he was seated, " I have read over " your work with great care, (said my master), " and am sorry to say, I think it improper for the " stage."—

—" Pray, Sir, why so? (answered the poet, " with an air of importance), it is written strict-

"ly according to the rules of the drama, and en-
"riched with the ſublimeſt ſentiments of the an-
"tients."—

—"Sir, I am ſenſible of its merit, as well as
"of the great learning of the author; but the
"taſte of the times requires entertainment of a
"different kind."—

—"Surely compliance with a vitiated taſte
"will not juſtify the breach of rules taken ori-
"ginally from nature, and eſtabliſhed for ſo many
"ages."—

—"I neither diſpute the original juſtice, nor
"the antiquity of them; but I apprehend that the
"latter in a great meaſure deſtroys the preſent
"force of the former. The cuſtoms of mankind,
"the part of nature that comes within the pro-
"vince of the drama, are ſo changed ſince the e-
"ſtabliſhment of thoſe rules, that it would be
"moſt abſurd to exact obedience to them now.
"Beſides, may it not be ſaid, without violation
"of the reſpect due to antiquity, that experience,
"in a great length of time, may have made many
"improvements in thoſe rules? The infancy of
"every art is weak."—

—"But whatever change may have happened
"in the cuſtoms of the world, truth ſtill remains
"the ſame, and the genuine ſentiments of nature
"cannot diſpleaſe."—

—"Very true! but ſtill they may not always
"be received with equal pleaſure in the ſame
"garb. Unimpaſſioned ſentiment, however juſt
"and ſublime, works not the effects deſigned by
"the drama, whoſe aim is to convey inſtruction
"and pleaſure at the ſame time, by an immedi-
"ate addreſs to the paſſions."—

—"Is it poſſible that you can be an advocate

"for the irregular monſters which at preſent diſ-
"honour the ſtage?"—

—"As for irregularity, I look upon it to be "but an imaginary defect. Though, even if it "were otherwiſe, I am the ſervant of the pub-"lic, and obliged to find entertainment for their "taſte, be it what it will. If you would but "conform"——

—"No, Sir! that I never will, againſt reaſon "and the ancients. I ſee you are prejudiced, "and therefore ſhall not argue with you any "longer. But I ſhall not acquieſce in ſilence. "I will publiſh the performance, without being "diſcouraged by your refuſal, and appeal to the "judgment of the learned."—

He then marched off with a ſtately pace, and my maſter, looking after him, "There again, "(ſaid he, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders), I ſhall "now have the ghoſts of *Sophocles* and *Ariſtotle*, "and all the doughty ancients, raiſed to haunt "me."—

As he ſaid this, a perſon entered, whoſe whole appearance ſpoke diſtreſs. He approached my maſter bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he ſpoke: "I have made bold to wait upon "you, Sir, (ſaid he); but if you are not at leiſ-"ure, will call another time."—

—"Pray, Sir, ſit down, (replied my maſter, "with a ſmile of encouragement); I have look-"ed over your work, and am concerned that it "is not in my power to receive it, as I ſhould be "ſincerely glad to ſerve you. But in this it is "not poſſible. I muſt be plain with you;—you "ſeem to want every poetical talent."—

—"I thought, Sir, (returned the poet, ſcarce "able to collect ſpirit enough to ſpeak to him),

" that the business of tragedy was to work upon " the passions! I depended entirely on the dis- " tress."—

" Very true, Sir; but there are other passions " besides pity to be applied to; nor is poverty a " proper distress to work upon them. Severe as " it is to be felt, it affects but little in represen- " tation. The upper ranks of life know not what " it is; and those who do, are desirous to keep " the thought at a distance, and conceal a know- " ledge they are ashamed of. The mind must " be properly prepared to feel for another. The " description of a famine would affect but little " after a feast."

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burst into tears, and was departing without being able to make any reply. My master felt his dis- tress, though he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumstances, nor give up an evening's enter- tainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, slipped a couple of guineas into his hand, when it fell to my lot to change my service.

I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart so strongly as on this occasion. The poet kissed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance; and forgetting for a moment all his distresses, went to a coffee-house, and *changed* me to pay for his breakfast; " where " I was immediately *borrowed* at the bar, by an " officer who was going to dine with his general, " and wanted money to give his servants."—*Vol.* I. *page* 112.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's master engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleasure. His mistress persuades him that she has poisoned him and herself. His situation at hearing this. Striking proofs of medical skill, with the advantage of a regular course of practice. An exemplary instance of charity and forgiveness diverts the doctor's attention to the murderess.

(CHRYSAL, *after having seen several striking scenes, in the course of an extensive circulation, is at length carried to an horse-race, where he is initiated in some of the mysteries of the turf.)*

"It was on a sporting bet, on one of the by-"matches, that I was *lost* that evening to the "nobleman, as I said, in whose possession I hap-"pened to remain till the end of the meeting." *Vol.* II. *page* 84.

As it was late in the evening when my master arrived in *London*, he resolved to indulge himself for that night in the embraces of a tender-hearted female, whom he *picked up* in the street, (for he was no way nice in his amours), as he walked from the inn, where he alighted, to his own house, in order to stretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences passed upon this occasion. When his lordship had made his mistress *nobly* drunk, *by way of refining his pleasure*, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where awaking about midnight, he was surprised to find her cold and lifeless in his arms. After some fruitless efforts to move her, he started out of bed in a fright, and called up all his ser-

vants;

vants; who perceiving that ſhe was not actually dead, took ſuch pains to recover her, that ſhe at length opened her eyes, and ſtaring wildly around her for ſome moments, "Where am I? (ſaid ſhe) "Are theſe the regions of the damn'd? for thither only can ſuch ſelf-murdering wretches as I "am go."—Then ſeeing his lordſhip, whoſe curioſity had brought him to the bed-ſide, "and are "you dead too? (continued ſhe, wringing her "hands, and weeping moſt paſſionately), O why "did I not confine my rage to myſelf? Why did "I add your murder to my own, to plunge my "ſoul ſtill deeper in perdition!"

This ſurpriſed all preſent. The ſervants, who were indifferent whether it were true or falſe, imagined ſhe only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herſelf, ſoothing her with expreſſions of tenderneſs, and telling her ſhe was not dead, but would ſoon be very well; but my maſter was too nearly concerned to think ſo coolly of the matter.

"What is that you ſay? (ſaid he, trembling in "horror), what is it you ſay about murder? "There is no one murdered here!"

"How! (anſwered ſhe, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him), is it poſſible that I am ſtill alive, "and that you alſo live! It cannot be! the poi"ſon which I ſwallowed this night, and in which "you ſhared too largely, cannot have miſſed of "its effect. But ſoft; its operation now begins! "that pang!—oh!—that pang beſpeaks the near "approach of death!—O mercy!—O cry for "mercy on your ſins!"

"What poiſon? (interrupted he, terrified al"moſt to diſtraction), what poiſon have I ſhared "*in? Speak!*—tell me directly, or—"

"Spare your threats, my lord, (said ſhe, with "a compoſure in her looks and manner that per-"ſuaded every one preſent ſhe was in her ſenſes); "ſpare your threats to a wretch whom death will "ſoon deliver from your power; and forgive a "crime that proceeded from deſpair. Wearied "of the miſeries of this life, I this night reſolved "to put an end to it, and, for that purpoſe, "though on another pretence, procured a doze "of poiſon from a chymiſt's apprentice, who, on "giving it to me, ſaid it was ſufficient to kill "twenty of the ſtrongeſt men alive; and this "poiſon did I take an opportunity to put into the "laſt bottle of wine, when you went out of the "room, determined to ſacrifice one man to my "revenge, for the injuries I had received from "the ſex: Though after I had done it, my heart "relented; but you inſiſted on my drinking, and "fear of your reſentment prevented me from "making a diſcovery, that would have ſaved us "both from this unhappy——" At theſe words, ſhe fell into convulſions ſo ſtrong, that every one who ſaw her thought ſhe was really in the agonies of death.

The ſituation of my maſter at this ſight may be eaſily conceived. He inſtantly felt every pain that poiſon could produce, and falling on the floor, roared aloud in anguiſh of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confeſſing all the ſins of his life to the ſervants who ſtood around him.

As ſoon as they had raiſed him up and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope aroſe at his finding he did not immediately die. "What! "(exclaimed he), is every one combined againſt "me? Am I to periſh for want of aſſiſtance?

"Will

"Will nobody call me even a phyfician? Perhaps "I might yet be faved, were proper means ap- "plied! Will nobody call me a phyfician?"

On his faying this, every one was running to obey him, the fight of which threw him into new diftrefs. "O wretch that I am! (exclaimed he), "and fo I am to be left alone, to perifh for want "even of a drop of water! Is it not enough for "fome of you to go, and not all to defert me "in this bafe, this barbarous manner?"—This feemed to reftore them to their fenfes; and accordingly, while fome went to call the doctors, the reft ftaid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will foon be gathered together. He was immediately furrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty (for as he had not named any one in particular, his fervants, to fhow their care, had fummoned all they knew of), who, taking the account he gave them of his being poifoned for truth, proceeded inftantly to practife upon him every method they had ever heard of being ufed in fuch a cafe, in hope that fome one of them might take effect. He was cup'd, bled, and bliftered; vomited, clyftered, and purged in the fpace of two hours; the doctors fagacioufly difcovering new fymptoms of the poifon every new remedy they tried.

When they found that beyond their expectations he had ftrength enough to outlive all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm to take a fweat, comforted him with hopes of his recovery, in confequence of their fkill and care.

While they waited patiently for this important crifis, fome of them happened to think of the *poor murderefs*, who had been neglected all this time,

time, and now lay in a ſwoon, the convulſions having gone off as her ſtrength failed.

On hearing her name mentioned, his lordſhip, to ſhow his Chriſtian charity, and prove the ſincerity of the repentance and amendment which he vowed in caſe his life ſhould be mercifully ſpared, deſired that they would do ſomething for the unhappy creature, if ſhe was ſtill alive. This was ſufficient to attach their compaſſion and care. They anſwered with one voice, that it was a pity to let her periſh, without even attempting to ſave her; and praiſing his lordſhip's goodneſs, prepared to try ſome experiments upon her alſo, if only to do ſomething for their fee.

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murdereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news, and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THEIR practice upon this new ſubject, however, was cut ſhort by a ſucceſs more ſpeedy than they deſired, their firſt operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe perceived what had been done, and recovered ſtrength to ſpeak, "Good God (ſaid "ſhe); what is the meaning of this? Who can "have been ſo inhuman as to bleed me, when it "is known to be ruin in my diſorder?"

"In your diſorder! (ſaid one of the doctors "with a contemptuous frown), what diſorder? "Have you not poiſoned yourſelf? and what is "ſtill worſe, his lordſhip alſo, who now lies in "the ſame deſperate condition with you, and has "from his unmerited goodneſs directed us to "take this care of you; though if we can ſave you "from this death, it muſt be to ſuffer one more "ignominious."

"I poiſon myſelf! (interrupted ſhe, raiſing "herſelf up in the bed); I poiſon his lordſhip! "What can you mean by this? I underſtand you "not; and am innocent, even in thought, of any "ſuch crime. Explain yourſelf therefore, and "do not ſport with the miſery of a wretched "creature, who has more real diſtreſſes than ſhe "is able to bear, without the addition of imagi-"nary guilt."

This amazed them all. They ſtood looking at each other for ſome moments, wrapt in reflections, not the moſt pleaſing, on the conſequences which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordſhip in the manner they had done, in caſe what ſhe ſaid ſhould prove true. At length, on her repeating her entreaties, one of them condeſcended to inform her of every thing that had paſſed, dwelling particularly on the deſperate condition his lordſhip had been in, and the various methods they had uſed to relieve him.

Weak and diſpirited as you muſt ſuppoſe her to have been, ſhe was ſcarce able to refrain from laughter at this account. "A deſperate condi-"tion he muſt be in now indeed (ſaid ſhe), "whatever he was in before! but if you will "give me leave to ſlip on my gown and go to "him, I'll ſoon complete his cure."

This

This was a ſtep ſo contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them obſerving the impropriety of liſtening to the ravings of a perſon whoſe head muſt certainly be diſtracted by the effects of the poiſon, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful for what ſhe had juſt ſaid.

But ſhe was delivered from this diſcipline by the appearance of his lordſhip, who, on one of his ſervants carrying him the pleaſing news of what ſhe ſaid, had found ſtrength enough to run to her, and throwing himſelf on the bed, "O my dear-"eſt girl (exclaimed he, claſping his arms around "her neck), am I not then a dead man? Tell "me—tell me the truth directly!—am I not a "dead man?"—

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her he had ſuffered. Shocked at the thought, ſhe held up her hands in a ſupplicating poſture, and imploring his pardon for what ſhe had been the involuntary cauſe of, informed him that ſhe was ſubject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever ſhe drank to any exceſs, as his lordſhip had compelled her to do that night, much, he muſt have been ſenſible, againſt her inclination, though ſhe dared not to refuſe him; and that when ſhe was in thoſe fits, which laſted till the effects of the liquor went off, ſhe was apt to rave, and ſpeak every extravagance and inconſiſtency that could come into a diſordered head.

The manner in which ſhe ſpoke left not the leaſt room for doubt. All his fears were inſtantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of every thing he had ſuffered in mind and body; and he not only forgave her, but alſo made her an handſome preſent in recompence for her happy news.

But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the ſevereſt terms, for their ignorance and preſumption in putting him to ſuch torture, and tearing his conſtitution by ſuch violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to allege in their vindication his aſſertions of what he felt, and intreaties not to leave any thing unattempted that they thought might poſſibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have ſeen that you were ſurprized at his lordſhip's indelicacy and diſregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in ſo low a ſtate of infamy and wretchedneſs, as to walk the ſtreet to offer herſelf to caſual proſtitution, as well as at her expreſſing herſelf in a manner ſo much above her appearance and circumſtances. But the leaſt acquaintance with the world would eaſily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chaſtity, the characteriſtic virtue of her ſex, the deſcent to this loweſt degree of human miſery is natural, and ſeldom, very ſeldom, fails to come of courſe. The kept miſtreſs, who this day ſhines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months ſpend the night in the ſtreets for want of an habitation to hide her head, and with-

out clothes to shelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty that first recommended her is worn off; for no prosperity that is not established on virtue can last. Theirs indeed is of all the most fleeting, the vice which is their support affecting their own conduct by example, and making them lavish profusely what they get from profusion.

Such had been the case of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes; but vice had blasted all, and left her only the reflection of what she might have been, to aggravate her present wretchedness.

As to him, his health possibly was in a state not worthy of regard; and for his delicacy, the indiscriminate vague intercourse of the sexes effectually destroys that, as well as the sentimental attachment which refines the desire of rational beings, and distinguishes it from the gross appetite of brute animals, so that in general nothing farther than the gratification of that appetite is now sought; and as that can be effected by any one object as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference with those who profess themselves men of pleasure. The sex is all they seek, without regard to any qualifications; and consequently, when their appetites are gratified, they desert the objects of them with the same indifference as they took them.

But to return to my master. It was some time, as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him so long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumstance they could invent. This brought all his acquaint-

ances to have a laugh at him upon the occasion; to one of whom he *lost* me that afternoon on a bet, at a race between two of the *maggots* which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL'*s master goes to be admitted into an extraordinary society. Some reflections not suited to the taste of the times. Rise of this society. A description of a monastery, with an account of its members, and of some of its rules.*

THE next morning after I came into the possession of my new master, he set out upon a party of pleasure of a most extraordinary nature. This was to be admitted into a society, formed of a number of persons of the first distinction, in burlesque imitation of the religious societies which are instituted in other countries.

I have already told you, that I shall not give any opinion in religious matters. But whether the original institution of such societies was right or not, as the motive of them was the worship of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule most certainly must be wrong, the mind of man seldom being acute or attentive enough to distinguish between matters which, to appearance, are so intimately connected as the mode of worship, and the object of it, but generally involving either in the disregard affecting the other. In the present instance, indeed, the disregard was designedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the ſcene in which my maſter was going to act a capital part, it is neceſſary to trace the whole from its original.

A perſon of a flighty imagination, and who poſſeſſed a fortune that enabled him to purſue thoſe flights, cloyed with common pleaſures, and ambitious of diſtinguiſhing himſelf among his companions, had reſolved to try if he could not ſtrike out ſomething new, that ſhould at the ſame time pleaſe his own taſte, and do honour to his genius.

The mere gratifications of ſenſe, in their utmoſt extent, not anſwering his deſign, he had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of imagination to enhance them. The great *butt*, againſt which men of pleaſure play off all their wit, is Religion. Their reaſons for a practice ſo groſs, are obvious. As the voice of conſcience will ſometimes intrude upon them ſo as to pall their higheſt pleaſures in the very moment of enjoyment, their firſt endeavour is to ſilence it, which they find by experience cannot be done ſo effectually by any other method as this of taking off the reſpect paid to Religion, from which conſcience borrows the terrors that make its admonitions ſo unwelcome. Beſide, they think it ſhews their ſuperiority over the reſt of mankind to laugh at what they are afraid of, as it is alſo convenient for their character of wit to exert it on topics where it is ſafe from being rivalled by men of real underſtanding.

These weighty conſiderations determined him to ſeaſon his ſcheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it be the better reliſhed. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of ſuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleaſed him.

In

In the middle of a large lake upon his eſtate there was an iſland, the natural beauties of whoſe ſituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this iſland he erected a building exactly on the model of the monaſteries which he had ſeen in other countries; and, to make the reſemblance complete, there was not a vice that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practiſing which he did not make proviſion in his. The cellars were ſtored with the choiceſt wines, the larders with the delicacies of every climate, and the *cells* were fitted up for all the purpoſes of laſciviouſneſs, for which proper objects were alſo provided.

Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itſelf, may ſeem to have been deſigned only againſt thoſe ſocieties of human inſtitution: But it was beneath his genius and ſpirit to ſtop here. Nothing leſs would ſatisfy him, than to attack the very eſſentials of the Religion eſtabliſhed by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ſerious perſon in it to be divine.

For this pious purpoſe, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was, to find a proper fraternity for the place. But in this, his rank and courſe of life made him not long at a loſs. He ſelected from among his intimates a number equal to that of thoſe who had been at firſt choſen to inculcate the religion which he deſigned to ridicule, whoſe names they aſſumed, as he with equal modeſty and piety did that of the divine author of it. And to ſupply any decreaſe in this number by death, or deſertion from the terrors of reflection, he inſtituted an inferior order of as many more, choſen alſo with the greateſt caution and regard to the latitude of their

principles, their fortunes and mirthful accomplishments.

The probationary office of these latter was to attend upon their superiors in the celebration of their mysteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monastery, where no other servants were ever permitted to enter on the most common occasion, as the very *decorations* of it would in a great measure have betrayed their secrets, the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too gross to require explanation to the meanest capacity, and the walls painted with the portraits of those whose names and characters they assumed, represented in attitudes and actions horrible to imagination.

Nor was their care to keep their mysteries impenetrably secret confined to this exclusion of common servants. The diffidence of conscious guilt made them even distrust each other, till bound to secrecy by oaths and imprecations, which derived force from the religion thus abused by them; an absurdity common among men associated for the most flagitious purposes.

But strong as the power of superstition is over weak and wicked minds, (for nothing but the grossest superstition could make them think oaths in such circumstances binding), their secrecy was secured by a still stronger motive, which was fear. They were sensible that even suspicion of such vices would for ever exclude them from the society of all those whom, in despite of themselves, they could not help holding in respect, and that so outrageous an insult upon the laws was liable to punishment from the secular power; of which, though they might by their interest evade the direct effects, yet the imputation would make

them ſo obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the ſtate, if their reſentment did not riſe ſtill higher, and make them take that puniſhment into their own hands; and theſe fears prevented the ſecrets from being divulged even by ſuch as had reſolution enough to deſert the ſociety, as they imagined the ſtain could never be ſo effectually expunged, as to ſecure them from thoſe conſequences.

The rites of this ſociety, and the ceremonies obſerved upon admiſſion into it, will be beſt explained by the account of what I ſaw my maſter perform on this occaſion, when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already ſerved his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL'*s maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring* CHRYSAL'*s maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *juſt as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL'*s maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL'*s maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak.*

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my maſter arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no ſooner made the concerted ſignal, than a boat was ſent to ferry him over.

On his landing in the iſland he went to the monaſtery, where he found the ſociety juſt ſitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a ſhort meal, and drank their ſpirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their reſpective cells, to prepare for the ſolemnity they were going to celebrate. My maſter then, clad in a milk-white robe of the fineſt linen, that flowed looſely round, repaired, at the tolling of the bell, to the chapel, the ſcene of all their myſterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him to the ſound of ſoft and ſolemn muſic.

On his entrance he made a moſt profound obeiſance, and advancing ſlowly towards a table that ſtood againſt the wall in the upper end of the chapel, as ſoon as he came to the rails by which it was ſurrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profeſſion of his principles, nearly in the words, but with the moſt groſs perverſion of the ſenſe of the articles of faith of the religion eſtabliſhed in the country, demanded admiſſion within the rails, the peculiar ſtation of the upper order, where the ſuperior, and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) ſtood arrayed in the habits of thoſe whoſe names and characters they profaned by their aſſumption.

When he had finiſhed, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profeſſion, alſo preferred the ſame claim. And there were more who had a right to do ſo, but diſcouraged by the ſuperior merit of theſe two, they had declined their pretenſions for this time.

The brotherhood having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling

around

around it, the superior repeated a prayer in the same strain and manner with the *profession* of the candidates, to the *Being whom they served*, to direct their choice to him of the two most worthy of his service.

The superior then proceeded to take the suffrages of the rest with the same mimic solemnity; when my master being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inspiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received the *name* and *character* which he was to bear in the society, in a manner not proper to be described, every the most sacred rite and ceremony of religion being profaned, and all the prayers and hymns of praise appointed for the worship of the Deity burlesqued by a perversion to the horrid occasion.

In this manner the evening was wasted till supper time, when they sat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occasion, at which, nothing that the most refined luxury, the most lascivious imagination could suggest to kindle loose desire, and provoke and gratify appetite, was wanting, both the superiors, and the inferiors, (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as soon as they had served in the banquet) vying with each other in loose songs, and dissertations of such gross lewdness and daring impiety, as despair may be supposed to dictate to the damned, in both which, my master shone so unrivalled, as to bear down the superior sprightliness, wit, and humour of all the rest, and compensate for the want of every companionable merit.

But while they were in the height of their festivity, an affair happened, that interrupted it for a time.

time, and shewed their resolution, particularly that of my master, in a proper light.

The person, who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admission into the higher order of the society, possessed the qualifications, which he wanted, in the most eminent degree. He had such a flow of spirits, that it was impossible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every subject he spoke upon; and his humour displayed the foibles of mankind in such colours, as to put even folly out of countenance.

But the same vanity, which had first made him ambitious of entering into this society, only because it was composed of persons of a rank superior to his own in life, and still kept him in it, though upon acquaintance he despised themselves, sullied all these advantages. His spirits were often stretched to extravagance to overpower competition. His humour was debased into buffoonery; and his wit was so prostituted to the lust of applause, that he would sacrifice his best friend for a scurvy jest; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to serve, only to raise a laugh; in which he was also assisted by a peculiar archness of disposition and an unlucky expertness at carrying his *jests into practice*, as he proved upon this occasion.

Though he disdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my master's higher rank in life would carry the point in dispute against him; for which injustice he resolved to revenge himself in the most signal manner.

For this purpose, he had contrived, the night before, to bring into his cell a great Baboon, which he

had provided for the occasion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner, as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himself of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dressed up in the phantastic garb in which childish imagination clothes devils, into the chapel, where he shut him up in a large chest, that stood there to hold the ornaments and utensils of the table, when the society was away. To the spring of the lock of this chest he fastened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own seat, and there brought the end of it through a hole, made for the purpose, in such a manner that he could readily find it; and by giving it a pull, open the chest, and let the *Baboon* loose, whenever he pleased, without being perceived by any of the rest of the company.

Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my master's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raised towards heaven, repeating an invocation, in the perverted phrase of holy writ, to the being whom they served, to come among them, and receive their adorations in person, he pulled the cord, and let the animal loose, who, glad to be delivered from his confinement, gave a sudden spring upon the middle of the table.

The effect, which the sight of such a visitor had upon them, may be better conceived than expressed. Their attention had been so fixed upon what my master was saying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing so critically at the invocation, and in such a shape, made them conclude he was *the being invoked.*

Terrified out of their senses by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, *the devil! the*

devil! and ſtarting from their ſeats, made directly toward the door, tumbling over one another, and overſetting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confuſion, *the baboon*, frighted at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my maſter's ſhoulders, as he lay ſprawling on the floor, who, turning about his head and feeling the ſhock, ſaw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the devil had obeyed his ſummons in good earneſt, and come to carry him bodily away.

Driven as he was to deſpair by this thought, he ſtrove however, in the inſtinctive impulſe of ſelf-preſervation, to ſhake off the invader: but he, inſtead of looſing his hold, on his repeated efforts, only clung to him the cloſer, claſping his paws around his neck, and chattering with ſpight at his ear. This compleated the caitiff's diſtreſs. Every ſhadow of ſpirit failed him, and conſcious guilt ſuggeſting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted, in the blindneſs of his fear, to move the very devil to pity, by his pathetic wailings and ſupplications.

"Spare me, gracious devil!" (ſaid he) "ſpare "a wretch, who never was ſincerely your ſer-"vant! I ſinned only from vanity of being in the "faſhion! Thou knoweſt I never have been half ſo "wicked as I pretended; I never have been able "to commit the thouſandth part of the vices, "which I have boaſted of. Take not then the ad-"vantage of that vanity; but judge me only from "my actions. I knew not that thou wouldſt have "come, or I ſhould never have invoked thee! "leave me therefore, and go to thoſe, who are "more truly devoted to thy ſervice. I am but half "a ſinner. My conſcience always flew in my face

"when I committed any crime! my heart gave "the lie to my tongue, when I gloried in my "vices; and I trembled at the damnation I affect- "ed to brave! O ſpare me therefore, at leaſt for "this time, till I have ſerved thee better. I am "as yet but half a ſinner."

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who, at the inſtance of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter, is expelled the ſociety for preſuming to ridicule their rites. Farther conſequences of this affair make the ſuperior break up his monaſtery, and build a church.*

WHILE my maſter was making this eſſay of his eloquence upon the *baboon*, the perſon who had brought him there took the opportunity of the conſternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them, for the animal to make his eſcape, which he no ſooner ſaw, than he made directly to it, giving my maſter an happy releaſe.

Before he could get clear off though, one of the company, who was bolder than the reſt, having muſtered reſolution to raiſe his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, juſt as my maſter concluded his ſupplication, "Your "prayers are heard!" (ſaid he, ſtarting up and ſpeaking

ſpeaking as ſoon as a burſt of laughter gave him utterance) " your prayers are heard for this time; " and that devil of a great *he-baboon*, that's juſt " gone out of the window, deſpiſing *half a ſinner*, " has ſpared you till you are fitter for his ſer- " vice."—

At hearing theſe words, they all aroſe from the floor, where they had lain ſprawling on top of one another; and, looking in amazement at him, who had ſpoke to them, " Courage, my friends!" (ſaid he) " this is but a falſe alarm! our *maſter* is " not ſo ready to come for us when we call him, " or we ſhould none of us all be here now. How " a *baboon*, though, ſhould come here to ſcar us " out of our little wits, in ſuch a manner, the " devil may tell you, if he will, for I cannot; " but I'll ſwear I ſaw one go out of that win- " dow."——

" And I'll ſwear too, that I ſaw him come in at " it; (replied the author of the miſchief, who " ſaw no way to eſcape detection, but by pre- " venting farther enquiry by this bold lie), as I " juſt then happened to look about, to ſee from " whence the wind came that blew upon my poll."

This eclairciſſement ſatisfied them all: they inſtantly ſet the room to rights, and, plaſtering up their broken ſhins and noſes, ſat down to conclude their carouſal, reſuming their former ſtrain, in which they all exerted themſelves in an uncom- mon manner, to wipe off the diſgrace of their late *ſqueaking*, particularly my maſter, who *out-did his uſual out-doing*, in profaneneſs, blaſphemy, and wickedneſs of every kind, to recover his charac- ter, and to convince them he was more than *half a ſinner*.

They

They continued thus, till nature funk under the fatigue, when they retired to fleep off their debauch in their *cells;* where, as I faid, proper provifion had been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of reft.

Though the affair of the *Baboon* had paffed off fo cleverly, while their fpirits were in fuch a flurry, when they came to enquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impoffible to convey him into the monaftery, without the privity of fome of the fervants, who had all fo often *felt the jefts* of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the difcovery.

This account, confirmed by fome circumftances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty perfon, the fuperiors adjourned directly to the chapel, to confult how they fhould proceed on fo delicate an occafion. For though they had always highly approved of fuch *wit*, when *practifed* upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themfelves in the moft heinous light, efpecially in fuch an inftance as this, the confequences of which had expofed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their *weaknefs*, and fhowing, that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned.

Mortifying as this was to their vanity, the thought however, that the cafe was general, afforded them fome confolation. However, to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like difgrace, it was propofed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the queftion, to bury what was paft, by a folemn

act of amnesty, and make a special law, the observation of which should be enforced *by an oath*, that no member should ever after presume to attempt exercising his wit upon the society, in any manner, or by any means whatsoever; on taking which oath, and asking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender should be forgiven.

To this proposal they all assented, except my master, who, for private reasons, thought the latter part of it much too mild for so flagrant a crime. He had long cherished a secret grudge against the other, who not only often pointed his wit against him, in a manner that he could not digest, nor know how to resent, it being as polite as it was keen, but also put him constantly to the expence of double wickedness, the only qualification in which he could possibly shine, to avoid being totally eclipsed by him: His desire of revenge also was strongest on this occasion, as he had suffered the deepest disgrace.

Accordingly, he exerted all his eloquence, to show *the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies established by the laws of the society into ridicule;* the letting of which escape without adequate punishment, he said, would argue weakness and want of spirit in them, and must end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reasons, he proposed, that the offender should be directly expelled the society in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like insult for the future.

This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignity's being insulted, and expelled him that moment, without even

waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he soon had the satisfaction of seeing himself amply avenged.

The care they took to keep every thing they did secret, had long awoke the curiosity of the neighbourhood, who were the more severe in their guesses, the less able they were to guess right. But the affair of the *Baboon*, whom the servants got sight of before he could be caught, and, whether misled by his dress, or misrepresenting by design, gave out to be *the Devil*, was no sooner known, than a formal story was propagated over the whole country, that the end of their meeting was to worship the Devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had *often* been seen among them in variety of shapes.

Scandal always meets easy credit. The story was believed by many, and repeated by more, as if they believed it, never losing any thing in the repetition; till such an universal alarm was raised among the people, (who are content to infringe the precepts of religion, without denying its authority), that the superior, whose seat was in the neighbourhood, found it necessary to dissolve the society, and, effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better use of a pleasure house, in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country: Besides which, he also built a church, on an eminence near his house, that answered the double purpose of convincing the populace of his regard to religion, and of making a beautiful termination to a vista which he had just cut through a wood in his park.

I have anticipated these circumstances to satisfy your curiosity, as I have also omitted many, and

softened other particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been represented in their proper colours.

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent, with some striking instances of œconomy. A seeming inconsistency accounted for, from a principle not sufficiently understood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reason of the abuse of wealth.

YOU are astonished how such scenes of debauchery and excess could be supported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the constitutions of his guests; but this shall be explained.

To prevent satiety or fatigues, these meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time, nor held oftener than twice in a year; by which frugality of pleasure, they were always returned to with the keenness of novelty: And as for the expence of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community, (the superior contributing nothing more than any other member, except the first cost of building the *convent*, which he thought himself amply recompensed for, by the honour of having struck out the plan), and regulated by the strictest œconomy; the slaves of their lusts being sent back to the brothels from whence they had been brought, and the servants of their luxury discharged, at the end of every meeting, and no more retained, for the rest of the year, than an old man and woman who took care of the place.

To

To you who have supported the dignity of your nature, by preferring the pleasures of that reason, which was given to distinguish man from brutes, to those of sense, which they enjoy in common with him, the picture of this whole scene must appear *overcharged*, and irreconcileable with the great principles of human action, which always propose some *good*, either present or future, however the judgment may err in the thing proposed. But more acquaintance with life would solve this difficulty to you.

The general motive for attempting to turn religion into ridicule, has been already explained. But as some are seen to give into this practice, who seem to cultivate their reason with most success, and whose actions, and even inclinations, appear not to have the remotest tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for such an exception.

The first principle of action, impressed by nature on every thing that lives, is *self-preservation*. From this, *brute* animals, which, *by necessity*, proceed regularly in the course prescribed for them, never swerve; but the *rational* animal man, bewildered in his own imaginations by the abuse of that *liberty* which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of *reason*, often substitutes another in its place, by whose impulse he acts in direct opposition to it.

This is *vanity;* the real source of that ambition which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into destruction, however speciously it may be disguised under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the public good, as well as of most of the extravagancies and absurdities which puzzle superficial observers, and make them presump-

tuoufly impeach, as a defect in the works of nature, their own neglect and perverfion of its laws.

A particular enquiry into the effects of this *fuppofititious* principle, many of which, as I faid, are blazoned as the brighteft virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the moft atrocious crimes; or how nearly fuch virtues and crimes, proceeding thus from the fame fource, may be allied, though curious and interefting in itfelf, is not neceffary here. It is fufficient to obferve, that its power is able to break the force of habit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the effential difference of things; to cope with *prejudice*, and overrule the *infirmities* of nature.

This it is, for inftance, that makes the *conftitutional* coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would fee his country ruined, rather than draw his fword in its defence, *fight duels* for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony;—the *fuperftitious* wretch, who finds *omens* in *fpilled falt* and *croffed ftraws*, and *fees goblins* and *devils* in the dark, profefs infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven, by infults and bravadoes;—and laftly, this it is that makes the hoary fage, whofe life has been regulated by the ftricteft principles of morality and religion, while paffion might have rebelled againft them, commence Libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has loft the power to practife. Of the juftice of thefe remarks, the members of this fociety, of which vanity was the cement, as it hath been the origin, afforded the moft glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of, in fuch an affociation; but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the refult of real worth. The

falfe

false glare of public estimation reflects it from the vilest and most reproachful objects.

The institutor of this society was *admired* for every polite accomplishment, every power of pleasing in conversation; and the first set he chose were all of the same cast. This, with their rank and fortunes, and, above all, the mystery of the institution, which set curiosity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the most flattering ideas of it, made admission into it, an object of universal ambition, as it seemed a proof of every member's meriting the same character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many ashamed to quit it; and even they who did, were precluded from discovering any thing that might deter others, by the secrecy to which they were sworn.

There is one thing more which, from the particular circumstances of your own life, affects you more than any other, in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of lavishing the blessing of wealth to the dishonour of the donor, and with so little regard to its real use. But this, as has been the case in other instances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in those parts of the earth where the blessings of nature are bestowed with greatest liberality, the people seem least sensible of them, and are sunk in the grossest vice, as if reason and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world.

The reason of this remark holds with respect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profusion with every thing they want, the rich look no farther than to the gratification of their appetites and passions; as the means to procure which are in

their possession, they acknowledge no obligation to the power which first gave, and still preserves the enjoyment of them; but, on the contrary, affect to shew their independence, by prostituting it to purposes directly contrary to his declared pleasure; and this causes that abuse of wealth, which generally mars the blessing, and makes the gift of it so dangerous.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the society. The history of the superior. The particular qualifications by which he arose in life. Success, in a private instance, encourages him to try his talents in a higher sphere, from which he soon descends with disgrace. A striking inconsistency in his character.

I SEE you desire to have some account of the several members of so extraordinary a society. When the great lines which distinguish the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by superior abilities, that dazzle superficial observation by the splendour of their effects, and pass for such, however different in the tendency of their exertions, the delineation affords pleasure; but, on the contrary, where those lines are all distorted by vice and folly, and distinguished from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain, and, to paint them, a task so disagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However, your curiosity shall be gratified.

As the *convent* was dedicated to pleaſure, you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary indeed to the ſcheme of all other parties of pleaſure, it was not the firſt object of their meeting, and only ſerved to fill up the intervals between other pleaſures, which nature without ſome reſpite could not ſupport in ſuch exceſs. The circulation, however, even in this *piddling* for mere amuſement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters: ſuch of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you muſt not expect it from them all, I will give you ſome general ſketches of.

As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occaſions, to aſſiſt you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table ſits the ſuperior. You ſee every eye is expreſſively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit of all he ſays, while, by an art peculiarly happy, he alone ſeems unconſcious of his own pre-eminence.

Theſe talents, which, from the intoxication of preſent applauſe, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the poſſeſſor, by diverting from more ſolid purſuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune, becauſe always directed by the deepeſt and moſt delicate addreſs.

The firſt inſtance in which this addreſs was diſplayed, was in his own family. He had a diſtant relation, who had ſpent his youth in ſuch buſy ſcenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in ſearch of amuſement. To a mind accuſtomed to be wound up to ſuch a pitch, the charms of a converſation like his were relaxation

irreſiſtibly

irresistibly engaging. He insinuated himself insensibly into his favour, and, by seeming to have nothing in view but his pleasure, led him, as he pleased himself, not only into all the lengths of his own libertinism, so as to be a member of this society, when the decline of life at least should have suggested more serious thoughts, but also at his death to reward his complaisance with a much larger portion of his fortune than he had any claim to, from consanguinity or the preference of reason.

Such success encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the same qualifications to the acquaintance of *the great*, he not only gained their favour by them, but also imposed them upon them for abilities of an higher class so far, that, being secure of his subserviency to their designs, they admitted him to a share of their power.

But in this he had deceived himself as well as them, as he found, to their disappointment and his own extreme confusion, upon the very first trial of his political talents, when he shewed in the strongest light the difference between the abilities requisite to raise a laugh and rule a nation.

He had sense enough, however, to see his mistake before it had involved him in any consequences from which he could not recede without danger as well as disgrace; and prudently sacrificing his ambition to his safety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of those pleasures for which nature seemed to have so particularly designed him. Whether that enjoyment is as sincere and undisturbed as should appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not so certain as you may be apt to imagine.

The

The principles on which this society was originally instituted, and from which it has never deviated, *the professed ridicule of moral virtue and religion*, should seem to have proceeded from an utter disbelief of a Deity, or, at least, a fearless defiance of his power; but, contrary to this, there starts not at his own shadow a more abject slave to superstition and all its foolish fears, than he was at the time of instituting it, and still remains.

Such an inconsistence requires explanation to you, whose notions of life are formed solely from rational speculation.

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the history of the superior. The inconsistency in his character accounted for. The reason of his being sent early to travel for education. Political principles all necessary to be attended to in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to instruct him in religion. A frightful story gives rise to a frightful dream, which is interrupted still more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a swoon. Account of an apparition.

THE political principles of his family being in avowed opposition to their sovereign, the earliest care was taken to instil the same into him; and the ripeness of his parts and genius flattered them with a promise of his future consequence in the state.

For this purpose, before reason should have time to be convinced, by experience, of the injustice and

danger

danger of ſuch deſigns, he was ſent abroad, to be educated in a country where every object ſhould concur to prejudice him againſt the laws and conſtitution of his own, and the opportunity of perſonal intercourſe confirm his attachment to him, whoſe intereſt he was intended to promote.

The public conduct of his life has ſufficiently ſhown the ſucceſs of this ſcheme; as an incidental circumſtance in the execution of it will alſo account for the inconſiſtencies in his private character.

The religious principles eſtabliſhed in the country whither he was thus ſent for education, and the political ones it was deſigned he ſhould aſſiſt to eſtabliſh at home, were ſo intimately and eſſentially connected, that it was impoſſible to find a tutor for him ſufficiently attached to the latter, to anſwer the purpoſes of his family, who was not alſo at leaſt ſecretly inclined to, even if he did not only profeſs the former.

But this made no difficulty. Religion is in reality the thing leaſt thought of, however pompouſly it may be profeſſed in political ſchemes. They ſcrupled not therefore to commit his tender mind to the influence of ſuch an one, regardleſs what impreſſions he might make upon it beſide thoſe they deſired: An opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the tutor and his pupil were ſettled in the place of their deſignation, the former began his deſign, by diſplaying on every occaſion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the religion profeſſed there, as the objects moſt likely to ſtrike the levity of youth, always complaining, with a contemptuous concern, of the want of ſuch in that of his own

country;

country; not choosing to speak more directly at first, for fear of giving him any alarm.

But artful as this method was, he had the disappointment to see it did not succeed so well as he could wish. Though from the manner of his pupil's earliest education, it was easy enough to sink his own religion in his opinion, yet some circumstances rendered the raising of any other in its place, a matter of more difficulty than might have been obviously apprehended. His natural turn and quickness of ridicule made him see every thing in the most disadvantageous light at the first glance, at the same time that his dissipation and levity prevented his attending to the abstruser arguments, often necessary to establish the credit of matters of such importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; so that all the pains his tutor was piously taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect of making him an infidel.

Alarmed at this, the tutor, whose bigotted credulity had swallowed every fiction of superstition, had always some miraculous story of a *judgment* or *apparition* ready to refute the scoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himself advanced. The constant repetition of such tales, which he plainly showed his own belief of, insensibly made such an impression on his pupil's imagination, as persuaded him of their possibility at least, if he was not absolutely convinced of the truth of every thing in proof of which they were alleged, and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nursery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terror, his tutor took him one day to see the exhibition of one of those miracles which are said

to be wrought at the ſhrine of a conteſted ſaint, and which really weaken the credit of the religion they were deviſed to ſupport.

The abſurdity was too ſtriking, to eſcape his obſervation. He turned it into the moſt poignant ridicule, in ſpite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who, finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourſe to his uſual proof of an *apparition*, which he dreſſed up in every colour and circumſtance of horror, to make it have the greater weight.

His pupil took not more than uſual notice of the matter, while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himſelf alone and in the dark, the whole flaſhed upon him in all its terrors, heightened in every inſtance by the livelineſs of his own imagination.

What he felt in ſuch a ſituation may be eaſier conceived than expreſſed. He covered up his head with the clothes, and lay ſweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the ſame thoughts, and he ſunk into a kind of ſlumber.

But this was far from giving him relief. He was no ſooner aſleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him in the midſt of the ſcene which had juſt before been ſo elaborately deſcribed to him by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to ſuffer ſtill more ſeverely, being awakened by ſounds uncouth enough to ſtartle, at ſuch a time, the moſt reſolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrors of his dream. He ſtarted up, and turning, in the inſtinctive curioſity of affright, to that part of the room from whence the ſounds ſtill continued to

come, saw four glaring eye-balls fixed upon him, at the same time that a voice distinctly articulated, but in a tremendous tone, and language which he did not understand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkness, which prevented his seeing the bodies to which those eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the import of the sounds, only added to his fright, by giving room to imagination, not only to form the most horrible conceptions of them, but also to apprehend them still more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to support such an attack; but giving one helpless shriek, sunk back in a swoon.

His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the same sounds, but was not so much terrified at them, both because his mind was not so well prepared for terrors, and that he was acquainted with their cause, heard him shriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want assistance with the *cats* which he heard in his room; for from two of those animals, which, finding the window open, had chosen it for the scene of their amours, had those dreadful sounds proceeded.

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers, and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake, and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal, for weighty reaſons. He relapſes, and his tutor, for private reaſons, divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory.

YOU may judge how he was affected at ſeeing the perſon, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in ſuch a ſituation. Awkward at the beſt, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any aſſiſtance, nor had even the preſence of mind to call any one who could, ſo great was his embarraſſment and confuſion. Nature however ſoon delivered him from his diſtreſs, and reſtored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As ſoon as he came a little to himſelf, he ſtared wildly round him for ſome moments, and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who ſtill ſtood gaping in amazement at him, he miſtook him, from his being in his ſhirt, for the ſaint that ran in his head, his imagination ſtill continuing the former ſcene, and holding up his hands in a ſuppliant poſture, as he lay trembling on his back: "O mercy, gracious ſaint! (ſaid he), have mercy "on my youth! never will I again preſume to

"ridicule

"ridicule any of the ſacred rites of religion! "never will I admit a doubt of any thing it "commands me to believe! O mercy, mercy!"—Saying which words he fainted away again.

This addreſs, one word of which the tutor did not underſtand, threw him into a fright almoſt as great as that of his pupil. He ſtood for ſome time ſtupified by aſtoniſhment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his ſhirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern, and made him go to put on his clothes before he attempted to do any thing for the other.

While he was dreſſing himſelf, he conſidered what his pupil had ſaid, with rather more attention than his fear had permitted before, and recollecting the ſubject of their converſation the preceding evening, concluded that Heaven had made uſe of ſome ſupernatural means to ſubdue his infidelity, the impreſſion of which remaining ſtill upon his mind, had occaſioned his miſtaking him in the manner he did for a ſaint (for that he ſhould be terrified to that degree by the ſcreaming of cats, never came into his head), and piouſly reſolved to contribute his aſſiſtance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he ſaw occaſion.

With this intention he returned to his pupil, determined however not to diſcloſe his ſuſpicion, till the other ſhould make ſome diſcovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was juſt come to himſelf, knew him directly, now he was dreſſed; and catching his hand eagerly as ſoon as he came within his reach, "O my deareſt, my beſt friend! (ſaid he, "preſſing it to his lips), what have I ſuffered "ſince I ſaw you! How dearly have I paid for

" the profaneness and infidelity of which you " have so often reproved me, with pious and paternal care. But never will I be guilty of the " like again. I resign myself implicitly to your " direction; and will from this hour believe " every thing you require of me."——

His tutor, after giving him some spiritual comfort, and encouraging his perseverance in this pious resolution, desired to know what had been the happy occasion of it; to which the other answered, that some little time after he went to bed, the room was suddenly enlightened in a manner not to be described, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, stood before him wrapped in blue flames, and breathing smoke and sulphur, and calling to him in a voice that appalled his soul, denounced Heaven's vengeance against his infidelity, which he was just going to put in execution, when the holy saint, whose miracles he had so impiously turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory, and interposing between him and the spectre, the latter gave a shriek that shook the room, and then vanished in a flame of fire; upon which the saint turned to him with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and disappeared.

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing that exceeded belief, when alleged in the cause of religion, the circumstance of his having been mistaken for a saint, staggered his faith in all the rest, and made him for once justly conclude, that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear, with which the screaming of the cats struck

struck him in his sleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices.

However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and as soon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and solemn air, added a sequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himself, and having eked out the illusions of his fear, as distracted imagination suggested to him: whereas the latter aggravated those illusions, by untruths premeditately devised to confirm that deception.

He said, that grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the spiritual safety of one so dear to him, instead of lying down to rest, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his soul, in prayer and supplication to Heaven, to enlighten his (pupil's) mind, and convince him of his errors, in which holy exercise he had continued ever since, till this moment, when, in the impulse of a persuasion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inspired, that his prayers were heard, he came to satisfy himself of the reality of so miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the blessed saint who had wrought it.

This compleated the deception of his pupil, so far as to make him believe the truth of some parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether so certain of before. He arose, therefore, and reconciling himself to the faith of his tutor, by the strongest, and most full professions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him, to prayer and pious conversation.

In the firft heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair public, and openly joining himfelf to that religion, whofe truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, fenfible that fuch a ftep would not only defeat the political defigns of his friends, which muft be carried on under a mafk, and in whofe fuccefs his own wifhes were moft warmly interefted; but alfo overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church-living, of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promifed it to him, as foon as the incumbent, then finking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, fhould die: For his religious principles never interfered with his intereft.

For thefe moft weighty reafons, though, as you may imagine, he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profeffion of his new faith, till he fhould in the fulnefs of time be fo happy as to contribute his affiftance to the great event, which fhould eftablifh it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect, upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool fo faft, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reverfed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of feeing any more fpectres reftrained his profeffions within more decent bounds. For fo deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not fleep by himfelf, or be a moment alone in the dark; though his tutor, foon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himfelf, with the addition of many circumftances,

if possible still more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himself with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompence for so pleasing a piece of scandal; to invalidate which, was one of his pupil's motives for instituting this society.

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. History of one who turned libertine, in speculation, after he had lost the power of being so in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reason why it is stronger than any other. Instances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is successful where all others had failed, and by a master-stroke makes vanity gain a signal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the superior you see one, whose example should be a warning to mankind, never to be off their guard against the allurements of vice, while there is any possibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it.

While youth might have been pleaded in excuse of passion, and the busy application of manhood extenuated any speculative errors in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the strictest regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry give p ace to cool reflection, and the serenity of the p ospect

more

more than compensates for its approaching close, the whole scene was wretchedly reversed, and his setting sun over-cast with a cloud of vices most blameable in any stage of life, but aggravated ten thousand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before, that vanity was the cause of a fall, so reproachful to humanity : The manner though of its operating upon one, who seemed to be removed so far beyond its reach, is worthy of attention.

In no instance is the power of vanity so tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it arises from an opinion of literary merit. The reason is obvious. Real learning is the most effectual check to vanity, as it shews the instability of its foundation. When therefore any thing that makes a pretence, however falsely, to that name, seems to administer to its support, it instantly looks upon itself as above control.

Though early engagement in the more active scenes of his country's service, had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abstruse pursuits of speculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taste formed by the best education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in science, and improvement in the finer arts.

The liberality with which he indulged this inclination, soon marked him out to the attacks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors consulted him on their schemes. Poets submitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhausted theme of panegyric; and dedications

dications declared to the world his abilities and knowledge.

Adulation ſo groſs, was an affront to reaſon. He rejected with juſt contempt the praiſes to which he knew himſelf not entitled; and was ſuperior to the flattery, which compaſſion for the flatterer often made him ſeem to pay for. Happy had he always preſerved the ſame delicacy!

Among the crowds of paraſites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a perſon, whom idleneſs ſeduced to prefer this abject ſtate of dependence to the purſuit of a liberal profeſſion, which he had been bred to: A baſeneſs aggravated bv his poſſeſſing every qualification neceſſary to have made him eminent in any ſtate.

This man, who had thoroughly ſtudied the human heart, ſoon ſaw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He therefore ſtruck out a new ſcheme, the depth of which ſecured it from detection, though, at the ſame time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have diſcouraged any one leſs anxious for ſucceſs, and confident of his own abilities. He diſguiſed the ſtrongeſt flattery under a maſk of the moſt cynical bluntneſs and candour, and inſtead of praiſing all he did, and echoing in aſſent every word he ſpoke, he miſſed no occaſion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being who could debaſe the dignity of his nature ſo far as to give up his judgment to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour ſo ſingular, neceſſarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on, ſoon won his favour: For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion

for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with such delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion with which he had originally set out: In trifles, indeed, where being foiled could reflect no disgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himself when it was won.

But with others he observed not such moderation. Be the subject what it would, he exerted all his powers, (great as I have said they were) till he silenced at least, if he could not convince his adversary, over whom he then triumphed in all the insolence of superiority.

Such a method could not fail of success. His patron, sure of coming off with honour, sought every opportunity of entering into debate with him, and contracted an esteem for one who, as he thought, had thus discovered to him his own abilities, while every one else declined entering into a contest, which always involved them in disgrace.

Encouraged by this success, he boldly ventured upon a stroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taste, he had written a treatise, in which the grossest libertinism was set in so advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments against it evaded with so much plausibility and true wit, as were almost sufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its sincerest votaries.

The contradiction between such principles, and the practice of his patron through his whole life, would have deterred any one less enterprizing and experienced in the weaknesses of human nature, from disclosing them; but he had lately made some discoveries, which emboldened him even to

push

push his designs much farther, than owning himself the author of that book.

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to persist in busier pursuits, he had despised the flattery paid to his literary merit; but as soon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for such employment, he with a natural partiality gave the preference to that pre-eminence which he thought still within his reach, and affected to slight all fame that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind.

This was a sufficient direction to the parasite. He immediately shewed his book with a mysterious air to several of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints, at the same time, but under the seal of secrecy, that he was the author of it. There is no way so effectual as this to spread any story. One whispered it to another, till in a few days the whole town was in the secret.

The hints and allusions which were every hour thrown out to the patron on this occasion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A secret, though, in the possession of so many, could not possibly remain long such to him. One of his acquaintances, provoked at the seeming affectation of his not understanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was surprised at the account, vanity would not let him suppress it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the highest praise. He answered with the coy evasions of modesty, the most effectual affirmation, and shifted off any farther discussion of the subject till he should be better informed.

Accordingly, the moment his friend left him, he sent for the author of the report, and charging

him with it, desired to see the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him.

The parasite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He presented him the book without hesitation, saying with his usual bluntness, that if it was not actually written by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently said on those subjects; and therefore might, without any injustice, be asserted to be his.

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book spoken of, prevented his making any reply till he should have read it; when he was so struck with the various beauties of it, that vanity subdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it. "If the sentiments are mine," (said he, blushing at his own baseness as he spoke), "I am obliged to you for placing them in so advantageous a light, and think I ought to decline sharing in an honour, so much of which belongs to another."—

Such a repulse was no way discouraging. The parasite repeated his assertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and sentiments, as indeed he knew not any other whose they could be; and, insisting that he had no more merit in the affair than that of barely writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, appealed to his former conduct to acquit him of so mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to persuade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was so clearly proved, and what his own conscience bore testimony to against his false modesty. All that

remained,

remained, was, to act in such a manner that his practice should not contradict this declaration of his principles, and so raise a doubt of their authenticity.

But after having made the first step, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenor of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed religion, and professed vices he was unable to practise. And, lastly, to complete his character, procured admission into this society, which, as I said, was the proof of every polite accomplishment and qualification; where he nods, as you see, over the grave, as insensible to the mirth and pleasures enjoyed by his companions, as of the despicableness and danger of his own situation.

As for his parasite, his end was gained. From that moment he commanded him as he pleased, sharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived; and sure of such a portion of it, if he survived him, as should sufficiently supply his appetites, the only use for which he desired a fortune.

END of the THIRD VOLUME.